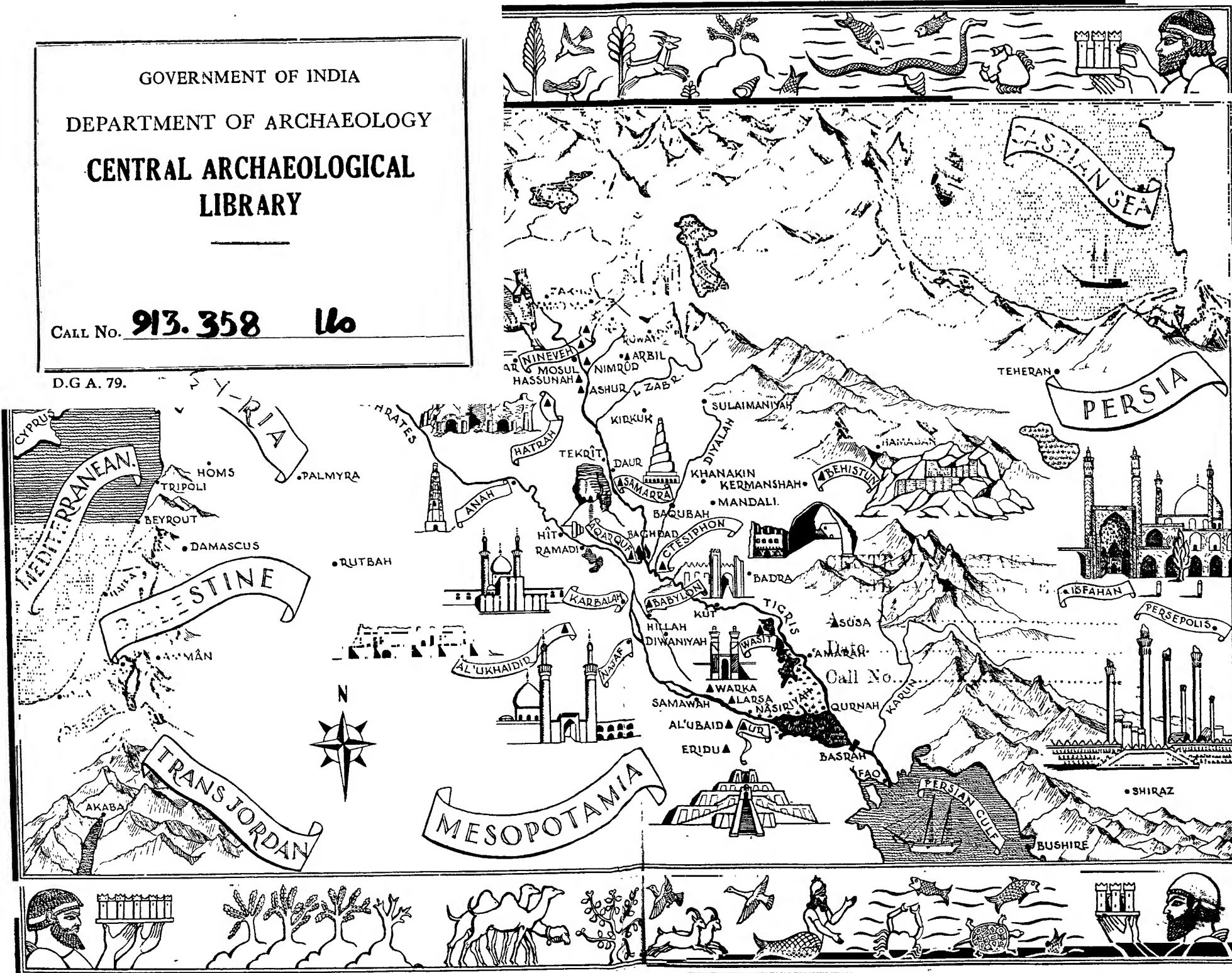


CALL NO. **913.358** **160**

D.G A. 79.



7

*FOUNDATIONS IN THE DUST*

GENUINE

LIBRARY

500.00

Dec. 1940

Gen. Sec. of the Library

*BY THE SAME AUTHOR*

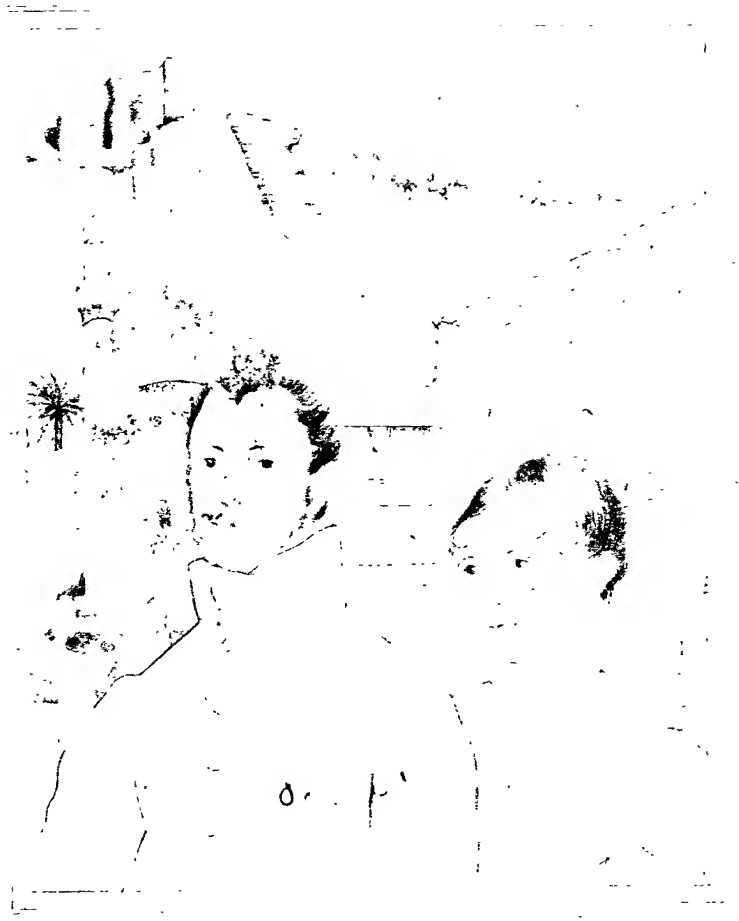
★

TWIN RIVERS: A brief history of Iraq  
from the earliest times to the present  
day *Oxford University Press*

RUINED CITIES OF IRAQ *O.U.P.*

MESOPOTAMIA: Excavation on Sum-  
erian Sites *Lovat Dickson*





Claudius and Mary Rich

# FOUNDATIONS IN THE DUST

*A Story of Mesopotamian Exploration*



SETON LLOYD, F.S.A.



33583

' . . . them that dwell in houses of clay,  
Whose foundation is in the dust,  
Which are crushed before the moth!  
Betwixt morning and evening they are destroyed.'

*The Book of Job*

~~14-330~~

~~CENTRAL ARCHAEOLOGICAL  
LIBRARY~~

~~Acq. No.~~

~~Date~~

913.358

Llo

GEOFFREY CUMBERLEGE

OXFORD UNIVERSITY PRESS

LONDON NEW YORK TORONTO

1947

OXFORD UNIVERSITY PRESS

AMEN HOUSE, E.C.4

London Edinburgh Glasgow New York  
Toronto Melbourne Wellington Bombay  
Calcutta Madras Cape Town

GEOFFREY CUMBERLEGE

PUBLISHER TO THE UNIVERSITY

CENTRAL ASIAN LIBRARY

LIBRARY, NEW YORK

Acc. No. 33683  
Date 30-4-58  
Call 913.358  
LL0.

PRINTED IN GREAT BRITAIN

# CONTENTS

INTRODUCTION BY SIR LEONARD WOOLLEY	vii
AUTHOR'S PREFACE	xi

## Book I

I. THESE CAME EAST	I
II. RAFIDAIN	17
III. THE RESIDENCY	28
IV. BUCKINGHAM	41
V. RICH'S LAST YEARS	57

## Book II

VI. BIRTH OF ASSYRIOLOGY	77
VII. LAYARD AND BOTTA	94
VIII. NIMRÛD	111
IX. SUBSIDIZED EXPLORATION	128

## Book III

X. SCRAMBLE FOR ANTIQUITIES	145
XI. SMITH AND RASSAM	162
XII. BIRTH OF A CONSCIENCE	178
XIII. ETHICS AND METHOD	197
XIV. EPILOGUE	220
BIBLIOGRAPHY	225
INDEX	229

# ILLUSTRATIONS

by ULRICA LLOYD

Claudius and Mary Rich (from a portrait and miniature both reproduced in <i>Baghdad in Bygone Days</i> )	Frontispiece
Birds and Animals of the <i>Chól</i>	Facing Page 20
The Disaster to the Euphrates Expedition (from Ainsworth)	90
H. C. Rawlinson in his <i>chardag</i> at Baghdad (from two portraits in his Biography, one by G. F. Watts)	92
Austen Henry Layard in Bakhtiyari Costume (from portraits in <i>Early Adventures</i> and <i>Autobiography and Letters</i> )	94
The Looting of the American Camp at Nippur by the Afaq Arabs (from Hilprecht)	184

## MAP

Ancient Sites of Iran	at end
-----------------------	--------

## INTRODUCTION

IN December 1843 Henry Rawlinson arrived in Baghdad to take up the post of British Resident; now, a hundred years later, Mr. Seton Lloyd's book aptly celebrates an event which was to mark an epoch in the long story of the cultural relations between Great Britain and Iraq. Rawlinson was by no means the first Englishman, or even the first Englishman holding an official position in the country, to interest himself in the monuments of its glorious past. Rich, a former Resident, who died twenty years before Rawlinson's arrival, laid the foundations of serious antiquarian research there; travellers like Buckingham, Ker Porter and Baillie-Fraser, Captain Mignan of the Residency Escort and Ainsworth of the Chesney Expedition, had contributed to as much knowledge of Mesopotamian remains as could be won from surface observation unaided by excavation or by literary evidence. But Rawlinson supplied the key to the inscriptions, giving historical value to what had been at best the subject-matter of fanciful speculation (even Layard in his early days could describe tablets as 'bits of pottery decorated in an unusual manner') and his work made possible that era of active exploration in which Layard's name will ever stand supreme.

Most of the early travellers and excavators have left us their own records, written in the engaging full-blooded prose of their time and illustrated by cuts in which the artist-engraver's conventions cannot wholly suppress the sometimes crude liveliness of the amateur's sketch. These originals Mr. Seton Lloyd quotes freely and at length, and, familiar though some of them are, he was well advised to do so, since it would be difficult to improve on their accounts and the *ipsissima verba* best recall the writers' personality; the value of his own book lies in the fact that it reduces those disconnected and discursive volumes to an ordered narrative which shews the development of scholarship, the gradual building-up of the scientific study of Mesopotamia's past.

It is indeed gratifying to realize, as reading *Foundations in the Dust* we cannot fail to do, how very large a part in that development was

## INTRODUCTION

played by the scholars of this country. It is true that Rawlinson's great contribution to knowledge, the interpretation of the cuneiform script, had been anticipated by Grotefend, a German, thirty years earlier; but Grotefend's discovery was still-born, suppressed by the ignorant jealousy of his German colleagues, and Rawlinson knew nothing of his predecessor's method when, working on the same material, he produced independently the same results. It is true too that a Frenchman, Paul Emile Botta, Consular Agent at Mosul, was the first to conduct in 1842 the actual excavation of a Mesopotamian city-mound; but it was Rich's *Memoirs* that had aroused the interest of the French Asiatic Society responsible for Botta's appointment and that led him to select Tel Nebi Yunus and Kuyunjik as his first sites. Layard himself only started work at Nimrûd three years later, but his discoveries there were no less sensational than those of Botta at Khorsabad, and when in 1849 he unearthed at Kuyunjik Sennacherib's palace with its reliefs of the siege of Lachish and the vast royal library with its State archives and religious texts which included the legends of the Creation and the Flood, then the field archaeologist had indeed come into his own; during the next thirty years both France and England carried on the work of excavation and on the English side Loftus and Taylor, George Smith and Rassam increased the debt which Iraq owes to this country for the re-discovery of its past and kept alive the interest of the public in this new branch of knowledge.

Layard, faced with the cost of excavation on a large scale, had secured the financial backing of the British Museum; a new precedent was set when in 1873 the *Daily Telegraph*, on the strength of George Smith's publication of the Creation and Flood legends, raised a fund for further excavation at Kuyunjik; but just when the future of Mesopotamian archaeology seemed best assured there was, so far as this country was concerned, a curious gap in field work. After 1882 the British Museum ceased for many years to sponsor any Mesopotamian excavations (Budge's forays can scarcely count as such) and private patronage came to an abrupt end. The Trustees may have felt that their collection of sculptures and reliefs had reached saturation-point; public interest perhaps waned as the romantic novelty of Layard's writings gave place to the pedestrian publications

## INTRODUCTION

of scientific research; but whatever may have been the reason, no more expeditions took the field. Interest was of course not dead, but only dormant. In Bath in 1927 I met a dear old lady, then over eighty years old, who remarked on the great changes that my work must have made at Ur and when asked what she knew about Ur answered gently that she had camped for three nights on the top of the *ziggurat*. It was in the early 80's that Miss Tanner, accompanied only by a Syrian Christian dragoman, had wandered through all Iraq and southern Iran, visiting the ancient sites and enjoying the hospitality of the harems of the desert sheikhs which she had assured for herself by starting out from home armed—this prim Victorian lady—with scores of sets of 'make-up' provided by Mr. William Whiteley's beauty-parlour. Public interest, which is generally the condition and must be finally the justification of field work, was still alive and only waiting to be roused. But the pause in excavations conducted by British archaeologists was actually an advantage to science. It gave to students a chance of digesting the vast bulk of material brought to the British Museum, and it meant that when digging did start again it would be on lines undreamt-of at a time when scientific method did not exist and the excavator's avowed object was the acquisition of 'show pieces' for the museums at home. Mr. Seton Lloyd very rightly champions the early excavators against unfair criticism of their methods and aims; to condemn Layard for not using the technique of to-day is as ridiculous as to make light of Alexander the Great's generalship on the grounds that he did not employ the atom bomb. If Rawlinson and Layard had not demonstrated the value of what could be recovered from the city mounds of the Iraq there might have been no story of Mesopotamian excavation to write. As it was, the export to Europe of the treasures of Nimrûd, of Khorsabad and Kuyunjik—treasures on which neither Turk nor Arab at that time set any store—restored that neglected province of the Ottoman Empire to its proper place in world history; it set a new task for science and it made possible the present-day accumulation of knowledge which finds its richest illustration in the Baghdad Museum. It was the gradual recognition of what the early workers with their lack of method missed that forced a later generation to adopt the archaeological technique

## INTRODUCTION

elaborated in other fields; the head of an up-to-date and fully equipped expedition working on a Mesopotamian site in 1946 may feel inclined to bewail the havoc wrought there by his predecessors a century ago; but he should remember that but for those rude forefathers labouring under conditions which made work well-nigh impossible he himself would not be in the field.

On the text 'Let us now praise famous men' Mr. Seton Lloyd has written a book which rightly celebrates what, working according to their lights, the early excavators did for science, and it is by no accident and no unfair emphasis that he stresses the part Great Britain has played in giving to a nation politically young the historic consciousness which is the surest foundation of sane nationalism. A new phase in the development of Mesopotamian archaeology began when Gertrude Bell created an Antiquity Service for Iraq and enacted the principle that foreign missions licensed to excavate in the country should hand over half of what they found to the country's Government; thereby she laid the foundations of the great National Museum of Baghdad. Now Iraq has taken upon its own shoulders the mantle of Rawlinson and Layard; the latest discoveries, carrying back the history of Sumer to its opening chapter when nomads from the northern hills first settled in the grass-lands of the Tigris valley, have been made by Iraqi archaeologists 'whose standard of competence can be considered equal to that of most Western expeditions'. In these achievements of the Iraq Department of Antiquities we in England may justly feel a pride, and we can whole-heartedly congratulate the book's author who, as Technical Adviser to the Department, still continues the tradition of British initiative and interest.

LEONARD WOOLLEY

October 1946

## AUTHOR'S PREFACE

THE subject of this book was suggested to me early in 1945 by the approaching centenary connected with the inauguration of Sir Henry Layard's excavations in Assyria. The occasion seemed a suitable one for attempting to knit together the lives and work of the great pioneer Assyriologists into a single narrative, which could afterwards be extended to cover the work of their more recent successors, and so present the whole of Mesopotamian research as a single epic. Actually it was late in the autumn of 1845 that Layard's first trenches were cut in the mound at Nimrûd, and on 8 November 1945 *The Times* drew attention to the occasion in a long article. By that time my own story, which was beginning to take shape, had fixed the date in my mind, and, accompanied by some of my Iraqi colleagues, I celebrated the centenary by revisiting the site.

Little has happened in our own generation to change the appearance of the Assyrian mounds. Approaching Nimrûd on this occasion our *salûgis* coursed a hare, exactly as Layard's had done a hundred years before, and some partridges rose from the most recent excavations—slit-trenches dug by the Tenth Army during the scramble to defend the oilfields early in 1942. The site is still visibly honey-combed by the tunnels and cuttings of the early British excavators, and the corners of unsculptured slabs projecting from them are all that remains to remind one of the art treasures which went from here to the museums of Europe and America. Just how great was the contribution which they made to the elucidation of Assyrian history may be judged from the early chapters of this book. The very considerable possibilities of further finds in the untouched lower strata, both here and at Nineveh itself, are a matter of most interesting speculation.

As is so often the case in books dealing with the Middle East, a word of apology is due in connexion with the spelling of Arabic words. Some attempt has been made to obtain consistency of transliteration, except in cases where any amendment of conventional

## AUTHOR'S PREFACE

spellings would appear grotesque (e.g., *Makkah*, *Khalîfah*, *Tal Khalaf*, etc.). A single accent has been used only where it is necessary to suggest the correct pronunciation. It has not, of course, been possible to avoid a wide variety of idiosyncracies in passages quoted from other authors.

An acknowledgment is due to Miss Constance Alexander, to whose charming book, *Baghdad in Bygone Days*, my chapters dealing with the Riches necessarily owe a good deal. Quotations from the Riches' own writings are, however, made directly from their own original publications.

SETON LLOYD

BAGHDAD. Spring 1947

# BOOK I

## *Chapter One*

### THESE CAME EAST

IT is a curious fact that, owing to the almost universal ignorance of Arabic literature in the West during their time, our ancestor's knowledge of the geography of Mesopotamia and Western Asia generally was derived largely from the accounts of various European travellers. The writings, and for that matter the names, of the medieval Arab geographers were familiar only to a small minority of scholars, mostly Spanish. An English merchant, therefore, like John Eldred, who travelled to Baghdad in Queen Elizabeth's reign, had little reason to know any more about the country in advance than, for instance, Xenophon did when he passed through the Babylonian Gates two thousand years earlier, whereas a cultivated Frenchman like L'Abbé de Beauchamp, who became the Pope's Vicar-General in Babylonia in 1780, would at least have had Eldred's experience and that of a dozen or more like him to draw upon. He would certainly have had access to the accounts in Latin by the two famous rabbis, Benjamin of Tudela and Pethahiah of Ratisbon, of their visits to Jewish communities in the East in the twelfth century. He would have read the travels of the German physician, Leonhart Rauwolff, a contemporary of Eldred's, and those of his own three great compatriots, Tavernier, Jean Otter, and D'Anville, while he could benefit from the works of earlier clerics such as the attractively named Vincenzo Maria di S. Caterina di Sienna, procurator-general of the Carmelite monks, and Emmanuel de St. Albert, the Dominican.

Historically, one may suppose that, for an Englishman of that time, by far the most prolific source of information would be Gibbon's great work, which appeared between 1776 and 1788, but his knowledge of Babylon and Nineveh and of pre-classical Mesopotamia generally would largely be drawn from the Bible, and realities would be confused with such semi-fabulous names as Nimrod, Sardana-pallus, and Semiramis, as indeed they were in Gibbon's own mind.

## FOUNDATIONS IN THE DUST

Yet here again a scholar would be in no lack of stimulating material for thought among the writings of earlier European travellers, since scarcely one of those who reached Mesopotamia seems to have remained unconscious of his proximity to the traditional sites of Babylon and Nineveh or to have refrained from adding his quota of comment and speculation on their authenticity.

An Elizabethan merchant, to be sure, such as Eldred (concerning whom it is interesting to remember that he sailed from London to Tripoli *en route* for Aleppo in a ship called the *Tiger*—perhaps the same whose master is mentioned by the witches in *Macbeth*) could be excused some ignorance in the matter. And he in fact referred to Baghdad, which he visited on several occasions, as 'New Babylon' and confused the 'Olde City' of that name with 'Aqar Qûf, which he called 'the tower of Babel—almost as high as the stone work of Paule's steeple in London'. Yet there can be little doubt that the legends which had accumulated around the great mounds north of Hillah were strong and plentiful. After all, the famous 'fortified province' had only begun to lose its importance at the death of Alexander the Great, and did not fall completely into ruin until the first century A.D., long after his successors had moved the capital to Seleucia on the Tigris. As late as the tenth century the Arab writer Ibn Hauqal speaks of it as 'a small village', yet Marco Polo passed the mounds without comment.

The Italian nobleman, Pietro della Valle, was perhaps the first to take at all an intelligent interest in the real site of Babylon. In the early seventeenth century he visited the Hillah mound and another similar hill 'distant two leagues' from the first, which was evidently Birs Nimrod, observing that one was in 'Mesopotamia' but the other in 'Arabia'. He also took away with him 'some square bricks on which were writing in certain unknown characters' and these, together with copies of inscriptions which he had made at Persepolis, were some of the first examples of cuneiform to reach Europe. Yet de Beauchamp was the first to make a proper examination of the trenches dug by the builders of Hillah in search of Babylonian bricks, and to examine the stories current among them of carved 'idols' and sculptured pictures, which seemed to him convincing enough.

## THESE CAME EAST

The site of Nineveh fared in much the same way. The mounds across the river from Mosul were visited and commented on by almost all the early European travellers, and here, as at Babylon, few could resist the quotation of some Biblical prophecy of the city's destruction and desolation. Rabbi Benjamin observes in addition: 'Nineveh lies now in utter ruins, but numerous villages and small towns occupy its former space.'<sup>1</sup> Rauwolff confirms this, when in 1575 he writes, presumably of the Nebi Yunus mound: 'It was entirely honeycombed, being inhabited by poor people, whom I often saw crawling out and in in large numbers like ants in their heap.'<sup>2</sup> A few years later Sir Anthony Shirley also refers to Mosul itself (a city which, as it will presently be seen, has at various times been the subject of some passages of disparagement which rank very high in the history of 'hate literature') and calls it, in comparison to Nineveh, 'a small thing, rather to be a witnesse of the other's mightinesse and God's judgement, than of any fashion of magnificence in itself'. So these and almost all other early visitors seemed satisfied with the identification of the site with Jonah's 'city of three days journey'.<sup>1</sup> And in fact it always seems a little strange that there should have been any doubt about it, when, from the summit of the massive palace-mound, one views the clear rectangle of city walls ('with four sides, but not equall or square', as della Valle remarked).

So the end of the eighteenth century is reached with Mesopotamia's great heritage of antiquities still safely bosomed in her mounds, and their history only the subject of conventional curiosity among Europeans. Yet there were great changes ahead and in England, even before the new century came in, the first symptom showed itself of a more than casual interest in the tales recently authenticated by scholars like de Beauchamp. It was in fact an important turning-point when the East India Company ordered their Resident in Basrah to obtain specimens of the inscribed bricks which the Abbé had seen at Babylon and to send them, carefully packed, to London. A little later there arrived in England a small case of antiquities, which for the moment represented all the known remains of Babylon

<sup>1</sup> *Itinerarium Beniamini Tudelensis*, Antwerp 1575, p. 58.

<sup>2</sup> cf. a translation in *A Collection of Curious Voyages and Travels*, 12 vols., by John Ray, London 1693, p. 204.

<sup>3</sup> Jonah iii. 3.

## FOUNDATIONS IN THE DUST

and Assyria. They were the forerunners of the many hundreds of tons of antiquities which were to reach Europe during the following century.

It must be remembered that in the meanwhile Persia had also recently proved to be a fertile source of cuneiform inscriptions. In addition to cylinder seals and other small inscribed objects, the imposing ruins of Persepolis with its inscriptions and sculpture had begun to attract much attention, and the whole of the material derived from it had already been intelligently reviewed by the Danish scholar Karsten Niebuhr. So in Denmark, as well as in France and Germany, scholars were already making a determined effort to find some formula for the decipherment of the wedge-shaped characters.

All these facts have a particular collective significance in relation to what followed, for it was with this background that Great Britain in the early years of the nineteenth century first established direct political relations with the Ottoman provinces constituting a unit known as Turkish Arabia. The first step towards this end had been taken in 1783, when the East India Company appointed a permanent non-British Agent in Baghdad. In 1798 his place was taken by a British Resident, who in 1802 received consular powers. Finally in 1910 Baghdad became the Political Agency in Turkish Arabia. Thus was initiated a most remarkable relationship between a Western power on the one hand and on the other an Asiatic country, the survival of whose identity as such resulted only from its traditional character and the inability of its conquerors to eradicate it. In the years which followed, this relationship was made all the more remarkable by the character of the individual Britishers who were successively called upon to uphold it, and by the cultural orientation of their special interest in the country. Naturally the primary motive in the establishment of the Residency was a political one, connected with the interests of the Company and some exigencies of the Napoleonic War. Yet it is only necessary to recollect the names of such early Residents as Rich and Rawlinson in order to gauge the extent of their preoccupation with non-political matters. Also, grouped around these central figures in the Baghdad Residency were other Britishers whom a variety of motives had brought to Meso-

## THESE CAME EAST

potamia. Scholar-explorers such as Buckingham and Ker Porter converged upon Rich's hospitable establishment, as Robert Mignan and Baillie-Fraser did upon that of his successor. Chesney's Euphrates Expedition brought Ainsworth and others; Loftus was attached to a boundary commission, while Layard, perhaps the greatest of them all, was prompted to exploration only by his own youthful initiative. Yet whatever the motive which originally brought them to the country, they one and all remained captivated by the increasing fascination of its antiquities, and their purposeful application to archaeology made Assyriology a science.

It is hardly necessary to say that the names of all these Englishmen appear on the title pages of memoirs and accounts of their work and travels, in each of which, through the familiar but surprisingly adaptable idiom of nineteenth-century English, there appears a fairly distinct picture of an individual with recognizable personality and characteristics. Furthermore, after their combined study and careful comparison one inevitably becomes aware of an elusive common denominator. It might at first naturally be assumed that this corresponded to some facet of national character or predilection, but later it becomes equally possible to associate it with the particular and universal preoccupation of the whole group. Lincoln spoke of the American nation as 'dedicated to a proposition'. It is a phrase which could suitably be used of these pioneer archaeologists. Their 'proposition' was of course the elucidation of Mesopotamian history.

Nevertheless, in search of any further light which may be thrown on the character and circumstances of their work, it may be interesting here to examine some factors in the early lives of these individuals, which predisposed them towards their particular career. For this purpose we should perhaps give precedence to Claudius James Rich, whose appointment to the Baghdad Residency in 1808 initiated our period of serious antiquarian research, and whose endowment of talent, charm, and linguistic ability created so high a precedent for future representatives of Great Britain in Iraq.

According to his biographer,<sup>1</sup> Rich was the natural son of a certain Colonel James Cockburn, but little is known about his childhood, except that he spent a great part of it in Bristol. He was born in

<sup>1</sup> Constance Alexander, *Baghdad in Bygone Days*, London 1928.

## FOUNDATIONS IN THE DUST

1786, so this would be the Bristol of Caroline Fox's parents,<sup>1</sup> a port of departure for passenger ships, where cultured families of Quaker merchants lent distinction to local society by their lavish entertainment of notable travellers. It is in fact in his relationship with the Quaker, Charles Fox, that we have the first tangible picture of young Claudius Rich, who at an early age was taken to see his library of Arabic and Persian works. At school Claudius had already shown the first signs of an almost uncanny talent for languages, and was at once fascinated by the smooth and decorative oriental script which he now saw for the first time. Fox, who was a considerable orientalist, took pleasure in his enthusiasm and, when the suggestion of tuition was made, willingly accepted so eager a pupil. In this way during the following years, in addition to the classics which he had learnt at school and 'several modern languages' which he had studied in his spare time, he acquired more than the elements of Turkish, Persian, and Arabic. Simultaneously, from a local school teacher to whom he refers as 'my mathematical master', he learnt Hebrew, Syriac, and a little Chinese. Such prodigies of intelligence naturally tax one's credulity and are in fact often liable to exaggeration. Yet, in partial extenuation of the biographer's claim, there is a charming episode a little later when young Claudius, walking on the downs above the city, encounters a gentleman who proves to be a shipwrecked Turk, and finds himself for the first time conversing fluently in a tongue which till now had been only grammar and exercises. In Rich's case one may suppose that an interest in the East was a natural corollary to his knowledge of oriental languages. In any case at the age of seventeen he applied for and was granted a military cadetship in the East India Company. On presenting himself for enlistment, this was changed to an appointment more suitable to his peculiar talents, which appear from a passage in a contemporary number of *The Times* to have created something of a sensation. It reads: 'It was accidentally discovered by a Director that the young cadet was a perfect self-taught master of the Arabic, Persian and other Oriental languages, the truth of which was testified by the Company's Librarian, Mr. Wilkins. This extraordinary circumstance . . . procured from the Directors at large a Bombay writership, which they

<sup>1</sup> Wilson Harris, *Caroline Fox*, London 1944.

## THESE CAME EAST

immediately presented to the literary wonder!’ But for the moment there was no vacancy in Bombay, so Rich found himself temporarily appointed secretary to the British Consul-General for the Mediterranean, whose headquarters were in Cairo, at a salary of £400 a year.

By a curious coincidence, some years after Rich’s departure for the East, the cultured society of Bristol again provided a stimulating background for an impressionable boy, destined to become one of the greatest orientalists of his time. This was Henry Creswicke Rawlinson, who was born in Oxfordshire in 1810, but came to Bristol at an early age to recover from an eye disease under the care of his uncle, an eminent local surgeon. A detailed account of his life<sup>1</sup> was written by his brother, Canon George Rawlinson, the historian and author of the *Five Great Oriental Monarchies*, who mentions that his aunt was a prominent figure in the Bristol literary world at the time, and lists the names of distinguished writers, including Hannah More, with whom he would have been continually in contact in her house. After the Bristol period, which lasted until 1821, Henry Rawlinson’s education ran on more conventional lines than Rich’s. He was sent to a small school in Somerset and afterwards with a scholarship to Ealing, where he concentrated on classics. Yet its end was the same—a cadetship in the East India Company arranged for him in this case by an elderly relative in the Civil Service. Rawlinson therefore also quitted England for the East at the age of seventeen, but, unlike Rich, he had absolutely no knowledge of any Eastern language and was as ignorant as the average schoolboy of that time on the subject of Oriental history.

A passage to India at the beginning of the last century meant four months on board ship, and it was during this voyage that Rawlinson made an important contact. Amongst his fellow-passengers was the Governor of Bombay, Sir John Malcolm, a soldier, diplomat, and Oriental scholar of considerable distinction, and also apparently an indefatigable raconteur. As Lord Roberts suggests in an introduction to Rawlinson’s biography: ‘It was, without doubt, an enormous advantage to the lad of seventeen to be so closely associated with the “Historian of Persia”, whose tales of his battles

<sup>1</sup> *A Memoir of Major-General Sir Henry Creswicke Rawlinson*, London 1898.

## FOUNDATIONS IN THE DUST

with the Mahrattas, and his experiences amongst the Persians, probably fired Rawlinson's youthful imagination, and gave that bent to his tastes which resulted in his subsequent choice of a career.' In fact on arrival in India he entered so whole-heartedly into the conventional life of a young subaltern that, during the years which followed, his youthful imagination might well have become less conspicuous. Already horses had played a large part in his life at his home in Oxfordshire and his pride in his father's Derby winner<sup>1</sup> lasted throughout his life. So in 1832 we find Lieutenant Rawlinson with his regiment, the First Grenadiers, posted in Poona, offering 'to compete with any rival for a stake of £100, in running, jumping, quoits, racquets, billiards, pigeon-shooting, pig-sticking, steeple-chasing, chess and games of skill at cards', and actually winning an equally large wager by riding with a periodical change of horses from Poona to Panwell, a distance of seventy-two miles in under four hours. Writing of this period afterwards, he himself says: 'I had excellent health, was in the hey-day of youth, had tremendous spirits, was distinguished in all athletic amusements . . . and had the whole world before me.' All this being so, it is more than remarkable that he found much time for bookwork, that he in fact gained two interpreterships to his regiment in Indian languages and was able to apply himself vigorously to the study of Persian. Yet it was as much due to this as to his friendship with the Hon. G. Upton (who 'made interest for him' with his father, Lord Clare) that he eventually in 1835 found himself sent to Persia with a small body of officers of the Indian Army 'deputed to reorganize and discipline the Shah's troops, so as to restore them to that state of efficiency to which they had formerly attained under the supervision of British Officers'. This corresponded to the real beginning of Rawlinson's career. Twelve years after Claudius James Rich's death of *cholera morbus* in Shiraz, he was to take up the threads of epigraphic research, and for a time even to succeed to Rich's official position in Baghdad.

Rawlinson's later work in Mesopotamia was so bound up with the prodigious accomplishments in this field of Austen Henry Layard, that it is he whose early years next merit attention. Layard

<sup>1</sup> *Coronation*, 1841.

## THESE CAME EAST

was born in Paris in 1817; but his travels in the East did not begin until he was twenty-two years old, by which time Rawlinson had been working in Persia for six years. Layard himself wrote the story of his earlier explorations<sup>1</sup> many years afterwards when much of his life-work was already accomplished, and, as a concession to the curiosity of his friends, included some paragraphs about the circumstances of his early life and the impulses which directed him towards his subsequent career. His boyhood differed considerably from those we have already examined in that his father's health, which required continual changes of climate, resulted in most of his time being spent in Switzerland and Italy. In Italy particularly, to use his own words, he 'acquired a taste for the fine arts, and as much knowledge of them as a child could obtain who was constantly in the society of artists and connoisseurs'. The results of this cosmopolitan and probably somewhat desultory education became apparent when, at the age of sixteen, he was sent back to London to study law: for after spending six years in a solicitor's office and the chambers of an 'eminent conveyancer',<sup>2</sup> he 'determined for various reasons to leave England and to seek a career elsewhere'. A glance at the coloured engraving of a young man in Bakhtiyari costume which forms a frontispiece to the *Early Adventures* is alone sufficient to suggest that the 'various reasons' were adequate ones.

It is evident that long before this Layard's interest had begun to turn towards the East. He describes how, as a boy, he used to pore over the *Arabian Nights* and had read every available book of oriental travels. In this connexion he mentions both Rich's memoirs on Babylon and the writings of Rawlinson's shipboard acquaintance, Malcolm. He also refers specifically to a paper on Susiana in the *Journal of the Geographical Society* by Rawlinson himself and the stories which he had heard of ruins and rock-cut inscriptions in the Bakhtiyari highlands. His interest in these matters appears to have become almost an obsession when in 1839 an opportunity for a journey to the East presented itself in the form of an offer from a relative in Ceylon to find him employment there. From the same source he received an introduction to another young man of some-

<sup>1</sup> *Early Adventures in Persia, Susiana and Babylonia*, London 1887.

<sup>2</sup> A certain Mr. Twopenny.

## FOUNDATIONS IN THE DUST

what more than his own age, called Mitford, to whom a similar offer had been made. Together they planned an overland route to Ceylon<sup>1</sup> which even to-day would be considered enterprising and to most people of that time would have seemed preposterous. Central Europe, Dalmatia, Montenegro, Albania and Bulgaria to Constantinople was the first stage, and thence across Asia Minor, Syria, Palestine and the Mesopotamian Desert to Baghdad. 'From Baghdad,' he says, 'we believed that we should be able to reach India through Persia and Afghanistan, and ultimately Colombo. . . .' Surprisingly enough the two young men were in no sense dissuaded from their project by the various experts whom they were able to consult in London. In particular Sir John MacNeill, a British diplomat recently returned from the Court of the Shah, felt that the journey across Central Asia might have some geographical value for official purposes. He also gave Layard some excellent advice on his manner of travelling. 'You must,' he said, 'either travel as important personages, with a retinue of servants and an adequate escort, or alone, as poor men, with nothing to excite the cupidity of the people amongst whom you will have to mix.' The meagre total of Layard and Mitford's combined means left little doubt as to which course to adopt. Layard having prepared himself for the journey by acquiring some knowledge of Arabic and Persian, learning the elements of navigation from a retired sea-captain and of medicine from a doctor friend in London University, they left England on 8 July 1839.

Of the three principal figures who have now presented themselves, only Rich with his gift of tongues was especially equipped in advance for the career which he eventually chose. The remainder were impelled by a normally adventurous spirit and attracted to the East by its quality of romance and mystery—a mystery, be it said, which has to-day been so largely dissipated by increased accessibility as to need emphasizing. Six centuries had passed since the end of the last Crusade severed the connexion between Europe and the Arab Empire. After the final fall of Acre, in Gibbon's words, 'a profound and melancholy silence prevailed along the coast which had so long

<sup>1</sup> Described by Mitford many years later in *A Land-March from England to Ceylon*, London 1884.

## THESE CAME EAST

resounded with the World's Debate'. For the Westerner, Arabian Asia had been shrouded ever since in this same silence and remained so until rediscovered as a subject of 'debate' by the world of the nineteenth century.

For Claudius Rich, leaving England in 1804, the immediate objective was Cairo, with Bombay looming remotely beyond—just how remotely he did not at the time realize. He was to meet his chief, Mr. Lock, in Malta, and for this purpose obtained a berth on a supply ship carrying stores to Nelson's fleet in the Mediterranean. Almost at once he met with a major misfortune which, though entirely changing the character of his journey eastwards, also afforded him, as it turned out, an introduction to new fields of study and experience, for which he must afterwards have been continually grateful. Some miles off Barcelona the store-ship *Hindustan* caught fire and, having been run ashore on the Spanish coast, was completely burnt out. Rich, whom this disaster left with nothing but the clothes which he was wearing, was fortunately befriended by a Bristol merchant living in Barcelona and provided by him with the means of continuing his journey. In this way he reached Italy, but was detained there for three months pending Lock's return from a visit to Turkey. Many young men would have found in a stay of this length an opportunity for some profitable occupation. Rich, settled in Naples, applied himself passionately to the study of music and particularly of Italian opera. By the end of three months he had learnt to speak Italian fluently and given much study to its history and literature. He had also added to his social accomplishments a proficient performance both on the flute and the guitar.

In Malta another set-back awaited him. He arrived there barely in time to be present at the death-bed of Lock, who had contracted a serious fever while travelling in the 'Plain of Troy'. So the Company suggested that he fill in the months before the arrival of a new Consul-General by visiting Constantinople in order to perfect his Turkish. His journey through the Aegean sounds a delightful one, since the small merchantman on which he was travelling stopped to trade at many of the larger islands. Rich would surely have appreciated the timeless world of the Greek archipelago, which a century

## FOUNDATIONS IN THE DUST

later formed a background in T. E. Lawrence's mind for his brilliant translation of the *Odyssey*. He must also have enjoyed a quaint encounter on the deck of a Turkish boat with whose crew those of his own vessel were fraternizing. An imposing-looking Turk greeted him with a delighted '*Effendim, sizi biliyorum*' and was immediately recognized as his chance acquaintance of the Bristol Downs.

Once he had reached Turkey the Company seem to have been in no hurry for Rich to return and take up his official duties. There therefore follows a period of fifteen months during which he was able to wander most profitably through Asia Minor and adapt himself to the peculiar tempo of Turkish life. At Smyrna he even studied for a time in an academy for young gentlemen and made many friends. For the rest he travelled around Anatolia and as far south as Aleppo and Antioch on what his biographer surmises to have been some sort of confidential mission. The period does eventually end with his recall to Cairo, where the new Consul-General, Colonel Missett, had now arrived. Sailing from Smyrna, Rich took the opportunity of visiting Cyprus on the way.

Missett took an immediate liking to his new assistant and life in Cairo was very pleasant. In Egypt the parvenu dynasty of sometime Georgian slaves known as the Mamluks were still in the ascendancy, and Rich enjoyed the society of these strange, flamboyant figures. He now acquired an interest in horses and is said to have attained a complete mastery of Arabic—a statement which one is forced to accept in the absence of any supporting testimony from an Arab contemporary. It is not that there is any reason to doubt Rich's phenomenal ability to learn foreign languages, but as anyone of normal intelligence, who has conscientiously attempted to master this particular tongue in a limited time, will admit, it is not so much a form of speech as a complicated mental attitude. We may accordingly be excused a little envious incredulity. So often in the past one has heard of Western orientalists, both of the present and past generations, credited with a perfect knowledge of Arabic, only to be disillusioned by the criticism of their surviving Arab acquaintances or by the testimony of one's own ears. It is perhaps a tribute to the subtle complexity of the language that the same cannot be said, for instance, of either Persian or Turkish. Be this as it may,

## THESE CAME EAST

we may safely assume that Rich's theoretical knowledge of Arabic, which had delighted Fox and impressed the 'Company's librarian' before he left England, had been so greatly strengthened in practice during his two years in the Near East that, when not dressed as a European, he would be mistaken (as, say, T. E. Lawrence usually was) for a member of some Arabic-speaking minority. In fact, it is not impossible that this was one consideration which influenced his choice of a disguise when he again set out on his travels. He was ordered at the end of 1806 to take up his original appointment in Bombay, and, of several possible routes to India, he chose the least direct one via Syria, Mesopotamia, and the Persian Gulf, perhaps with the indirect purpose of revisiting acquaintances in Aleppo and elsewhere. He dressed as a Mamluk, and through the exact knowledge which he now had of the character and deportment which would be expected of him in that role, he was received with distinguished consideration wherever he went. From Aleppo his route carried him across the Euphrates and through the foothills of the Turkish mountains to Diarbekir and Mardin. His first approach to Mesopotamia and Baghdad must thus have been down the Tigris—probably on one of the famous *kelek* rafts, an experience which will be referred to later as the special privilege of so many early visitors and so few of our own generation. In Basrah he had his first contact with the Company's Resident, Mr. Manesty, to whom he took a violent dislike. Manesty was an older man with a different background, and it is not difficult to imagine that a residence at the head of the Gulf, prolonged over several summers, when the shade temperature rises to 130 degrees, would have produced in him that peculiar cynicism which responds so unsympathetically to youthful enthusiasm. However, it was for the moment a short encounter, for Rich at once found a vessel sailing for India and he arrived in Bombay in September 1807.

Before leaving England a letter of introduction had been written for Rich to Sir James Mackintosh, at that time Recorder of Bombay. Expressed in the rather pompous idiom of the period ('If it is consistent with your views to honour him with your countenance, he will not, I am certain, give you any reason to repent of your

## FOUNDATIONS IN THE DUST

kindness and condescension') this letter had considerable repercussions. Rich, who had already been corresponding with Sir James, went on his arrival in Bombay to stay at the Mackintosh house. Sir James had six children by two successive marriages, the eldest of whom was Mary, a girl of eighteen, and with her as well as her younger sister, Kitty, Rich now became extremely friendly. He later went to live with Sir James's young secretary, Erskine, but both continued to spend much of their time with the family and to enjoy their company. Rich taught Mary drawing and painting, and little poems on trivial subjects passed between them, Rich signing himself with quaint nicknames such as 'Orlando Furioso'. Later in the year, when Mary's father and stepmother returned from a short health cruise, Rich asked for Mary's hand. Almost simultaneously the Company decided that a permanent Resident with a knowledge of the customs and language of the Turks should be appointed to Baghdad and Rich, to his surprise and delight, received the appointment.

Mackintosh's reaction to both circumstances may best be judged from a surviving letter<sup>1</sup> to a friend which is perhaps worth re quoting in full. He says:

You may recollect, perhaps, to have read in the newspapers in 1803, that Mr. Parry, the present Chairman, gave a writership here, to a young man of the name of Rich, merely on Mr. Wilkins' report of his extraordinary proficiency in Eastern languages, without interest, and, I believe, without even personal knowledge. He came out as assistant to young Lock, who was appointed Consul at Alexandria; and, since his death has travelled over the greater part of Turkish Asia, in various directions, with the eye and pencil of an artist, and with the address and carriage of a traveller among barbarians. He acquired such a mastery over the languages and manners of the East, that he personated a Georgian Turk for several weeks at Damascus, amidst several thousand pilgrims, on their way to Mecca, completely unsuspected by the most vigilant and fiercest Mussulman bigotry. He was recommended to me by my friend Robert Hull, and I had several letters from him. I invited him to my house; and at his arrival on this island, on the 1st of September 1807, he came to us.

<sup>1</sup> *Narrative of a Residence in Koordistan by the late Claudius James Rich Esquire.* Edited by his Widow. London 1836 (2 vols.), Vol. I, p. xxii.

## THESE CAME EAST

He far surpassed our expectations, and we soon considered his wonderful oriental attainments as the least part of his merit. I found him a fair classical scholar, and capable of speaking and writing French and Italian like the best educated native; he joined every elegant accomplishment and every manly exercise; and combined with them spirit, pleasantry and feeling. His talents and attainments delighted me. . . . On my return [from Malabar], I found that he was desirous to become my son-in-law. He has no fortune, nor had he then even an appointment; but you will not doubt that I willingly consented to his marriage with my eldest daughter, in whom he had the sagacity to discover, and the virtue to value, the plain sense, modesty, purity and good nature, which will, I hope, make her a source of happiness to him during his life.

Soon after, the most urgent necessities of the public called for a Resident at Baghdad. He alone was universally acknowledged to be qualified for the station. He was appointed; having thus twice before he was twenty-four [*sic*], commanded promotion by mere merit. They were married and are gone to Baghdad.

So Sir James was quite immoderately pleased with the new addition to his family. He had elsewhere described his eldest daughter as being 'of homely exterior', and one can almost detect in this letter a shade of curiosity as to the nature of her attraction for Rich. Yet any doubt whatsoever as to Rich's good judgement in this respect would have been most emphatically mistaken. Throughout what remained of his short life Mary's unselfish and admirably balanced character was to be a priceless asset, particularly during the long months in Baghdad when no European visited the town and they were entirely dependent on each other's company. From her letters and the fragment of a journal published in the *Narrative*, she emerges as a humorous and intelligent English girl, submitting patiently to her frequent relegation by 'Mr. Rich and the gentlemen' to the disabilities imposed upon her sex in the East. She outlived Claudius by more than half a century, and in her declining years became, for her younger relatives 'Aunt Rich'—a quiet and rather reticent old lady with a romantic past.

So Rich, now aged twenty-one, set out with his even younger wife to take up his very responsible appointment in Baghdad. The voyage to Basrah (in convoy owing to the danger of French privateers and pirates) took six weeks. On arrival they were received

## FOUNDATIONS IN THE DUST

with proper ceremony by Manesty, but it was inevitable from the first that the relationship between the old-established merchant-consul with his twenty years' experience of Iraq, and the precocious young man who was now officially his superior, would not be an easy one. Manesty had just regularized his relations with a locally-born lady by whom he already had a considerable family, and he made the initial and perhaps excusable slip of saying that she would 'receive' Mrs. Rich. This proposal received a polite refusal from Rich and a less restrained comment in a letter to Mackintosh ('. . . to expect that I would allow Mrs. Rich to associate with a dirty drab'). Yet the outward demeanour of both men remained extremely decorous and their meeting resolved itself into a cautious sparring-match, with Manesty attempting to insist that Rich's dispatches to Bombay should be open to his perusal, and Rich firmly declining this or any other kind of dependence on the Basrah Agency. Later, by the influence of Mackintosh in Bombay, Rich of course established his own precedence and was in fact eventually given the invidious duty of reporting confidentially on the conduct of his elder colleague. For the moment however he was too pre-occupied with preparations for his journey up the Tigris to Baghdad in the Residency yacht to be more than temporarily put out by his tiff with Manesty.

## *Chapter Two*

### RAFIDAIN

IT seems to be desirable and even necessary at this point to introduce some sort of picture of the country which is to provide a setting for the greater part of the following chapters. This presents certain difficulties since, at the risk of becoming tedious to those who know it well (and their number has greatly increased in the last five years), the picture must be clear enough to benefit those who do not. Moreover the land of Iraq has not the uncomplicated character of a health-resort, to be introduced to the public by an illustrated guide and a few gaudy posters. It may not, like an undistinguished vedette, be swung confidently on to the stage by a bowing impressario. In fact from among those who visit the country as passage-migrants surprisingly few are disposed to repeat the experience, and their hasty judgement is seldom easy to influence. Nevertheless it does often prove that, by providing information not only about the history of the people but about the geological background of the land itself, one can arouse sufficient interest to provide a basis for real appreciation.

A major clue, for instance, to the character of country and people alike is evidence of the varying degrees of success with which human ingenuity has countered disabilities of climate. For the great endowment of fertility, which nature gave Iraq with one hand, she partially neutralized with the other by withholding sufficient rainfall. One could therefore scarcely do better than start by describing how this came about.

In the map at the end of the book, a loop marked in the bottom right-hand corner indicates the present head of the Persian Gulf. A second and much extended loop represents the limits of the Gulf in Sumerian times, while a third passes fifty miles north of Baghdad, following the line of the original seashore of a thousand years earlier. The area of land between the first and second loops was not dry enough to be habitable until about 1000 B.C., so that with a

## FOUNDATIONS IN THE DUST

single exception the sites of all the Sumerian and Akkadian cities which flourished in the second and third millenium B.C. occur between the second and third loops. This is the exact outline of the province of Babylonia. Between it and the modern frontiers of Iraq to the north, lies Assyria, where early settlers were already farming the upland country before Babylonia itself became habitable. So in neolithic times the two rivers flowed into the sea through separate estuaries which can still plainly be seen, that of the Tigris near Sâmarra, and that of the Euphrates a little below Hît. The creation of Babylonia is simply explained. Where in Egypt the Nile pushed its delta out into the sea, the twin rivers of Iraq merely filled up the head of the Gulf with alluvial soil. The result is a province three hundred miles long and over a hundred miles wide, dead flat, without a pebble of stone that has not been brought from elsewhere, and potentially most fertile. It is exactly limited on one side by the foothills of the Persian mountains, and on the other a broken line of low cliff separates it from the Shamiyah Desert. Just as in Egypt one may stand at the abrupt edge of the high-desert and look across the strange, verdant rift of the Nile valley to another desert beyond, so for instance at Kufah in Iraq, from the parched and stony fringe of the Bâdiah, one looks in spring north-eastwards over the tops of date palms and sees deep green cultivation as far as the eye can reach, and if the plain were not a hundred miles wide one would see that it terminated in the brown foothills of the Lurish mountains. Furthermore, if one is inclined to believe in a Mesopotamian Deluge such as that of which Woolley once claimed to have found traces at Ur of the Chaldees, one is reminded that in the great Mosque of Kufah is the underground shrine called Al Safinah, where Moslems suppose the Ark to have rested. Its position on a cliff above the old seashore of the Gulf is undoubtedly a more convincing location than the summit of Mount Ararat.

Almost the whole of the alluvial plain is capable of being prodigiously fertile agricultural land; and a great part of it has clearly at one time or another been under cultivation. Evidence of this is the profuse network of ancient irrigation canals, now abandoned, whose spoil-banks, like parallel ranges of small hills, run far out into the plain beyond the scanty farmlands of the present day. For, unlike

the Nile valley, Babylonia has no annual flooding of the rivers to depend on for irrigation and the winter rainfall is rarely sufficient to produce a crop. So it is left entirely to the labour and ingenuity of man to arrest the flow of the two great streams towards the sea and distribute their waters over the thirsting land. This has been accomplished with a degree of success and on a scale which varied from age to age in exact proportion to the political security and social stability of the country. It reached a peak of efficacy in Babylonian times and another during the 'Abbasid Caliphate, but succumbed disastrously to the Mongol invasions in the thirteenth century. Agriculture in south Iraq to-day remains a dim travesty of traditional accomplishment. In antiquity the actual method of irrigation varied according to geological circumstances, one of the most important of which was the diverse character of the two rivers. During the spring both reach a level a little above the surrounding plain and are consequently confined within *bunds*. But the bed of the Euphrates is considerably higher than that of the Tigris, so that from the moment that it issues out into the plain at the head of its prehistoric estuary a succession of parallel affluents are drawn off from its left bank and run eastwards to irrigate a wide area between the rivers, and eventually to empty their surplus into the Tigris. Nahr 'Issa, Nahr al Malak, and Shatt al Nil are such canals, famous under these or earlier names for some thousands of years. Together they create at this point, where the rivers draw most closely together, a major agricultural district. Further south the course of the Euphrates has varied greatly throughout the ages. To-day it is divided by the modern Hindiyah barrage into two branches, from which again affluents are drawn off eastwards.

For the Tigris, flowing during most of the year between high banks, some sort of barrage has always been necessary to divert any considerable volume of water over the surrounding country. Here again, in ancient times, the first of these occurred a little below the prehistoric estuary. Affluents were thrown off from both banks. That to the west, afterwards known as the Dujail or Little Tigris, flowed parallel to the present stream, that to the east collected the waters of several tributary rivers and carried them far out into the plain, rejoining the Tigris a hundred and fifty miles farther south.

## FOUNDATIONS IN THE DUST

This last was in its time the greatest canal of all and known as Nahr Awân. Similarly at Kût, where the great steel-and-concrete barrage stands to-day, more primitive structures had from the earliest times split and resplit the waters of the Tigris into three different channels. One of these, the principal affluent from the modern barrage and now known as Al Gharraf, is the first canal in the history of the world whose construction is recorded in a written document. It was dug in the third millenium B.C., by a prince of Lagash, to eliminate the continual friction between that state and its neighbour Umma on the subject of irrigation-water derived from the Euphrates.

Before the two rivers are finally united in the great channel of the Shatt-al-'Arab, which carries their combined waters to the sea, they spread out temporarily into a vast area of marshland; a wilderness of waving reeds and a tangle of narrow waterways among the palm trees. Here, in a strange world of their own, the marsh-Arabs tend their water buffaloes from shallow-draft boats. In the intervals of cultivating rice they spear fish and net wildfowl for the town markets. Their life and circumstances closely resemble those of the earliest, prehistoric settlers in the drying delta, and the ornate, cathedral-like guest-houses of their sheikhs, built entirely of reeds and mud, approximate most closely to the earliest representations of proto-Sumerian temples in the fourth millenium B.C.

In many maps of this area, the entire alluvial plain is deceptively coloured emerald green in contrast to the pale brown of the western desert and the deeper brown of the Persian mountains. Any false impression this may give is immediately belied by a view of the country from the air. Apart from the southern marshes, only the main canals fan out into a checker board of rich cultivation. Pump-lifted water creates a green belt on either side of the rivers themselves, and some of the larger towns are surrounded with orchards and market gardens. For the rest the plain is *chôl*; not desert in the accepted sense but an interminable, flat expanse of dried mud, rarely encumbered with camel thorn or any kind of scrub, so that a car can proceed in any direction at high speed. The only obstacles are the ruined irrigation canals of the ancient cultivators and the mounds which represent their cities and villages. Once these are left behind



Birds and Animals of the *Chól*

CENTRAL AMERICAN  
 ILLUSTRATIONS  
 AND DESCRIPTIONS  
 OF THE  
 FAUNA  
 OF THE  
 CENTRAL AMERICAN  
 COUNTRIES



one passes out into an empty quarter haunted by mirages and dancing horizons, strangely stimulating owing to an untrammelled quality curiously comparable to that of an Alpine landscape after a new fall of snow. Yet this first impression of emptiness is an illusion which increasing familiarity renders ridiculous, for this is a world as populous with birds and small animals as a Scottish moor. Every tiny hillock gives shelter to hopping and burrowing creatures, affording them refuge from the jackals and lean, elegant foxes who come out in the evening. When winter rains are heavy the whole ground is afterwards covered with a fine sheen of grass and timid flowers. Then the Bedouin appear with their flocks from nowhere and the plain is dotted with black tents. Herds of gazelles, almost orange in colour, graze in the distance, out of reach of the dogs, and mile-long flocks of sand-grouse go fighting to their early morning watering-place, dark at first like a trail of brown smoke in the sky, then wheeling amazingly in a glittering ripple of white breasts. Grey cranes circle slowly at a great height before alighting and migrating geese pass in ragged formation. Sometimes the rain itself, or water escaping from the tail of an irrigation canal, will form a shallow lake stretching to the horizon. This will be covered with a fine variety of waterfowl, from small active sheldrakes to ponderous pelicans and more rare flamingoes or white ibises; grey or silver herons stand sentinel along its shore.

Iraq has been described by a French writer as '*le pays beige*'. Even in the villages the universal and neutral brown of the soil extends to the mud houses and the muddy reeds of which their roofs are made. The *chól* has this same unbleached quality, to which, after a long sojourn, the eye becomes so accustomed that a chance encounter with any other colour, however pale, acquires exaggerated importance. The dull russet and indigo of Bedouin attire become by contrast arrestingly brilliant, while suddenly to ride out into a patch of growing corn gives one almost the physical sensation of passing from sunshine into a green shade. Yet this can only happen in spring, and in fact our whole picture of the *chól* applies accurately only to the six months of spring and winter. Under the summer sun, with a shade temperature of 120–125 degrees, it is a region undoubtedly better avoided, and one must return to the cities, whose domes

## FOUNDATIONS IN THE DUST

and minarets, glazed or gilded, shimmer in the heat-waves arising from a thousand brick houses; their flat roofs are lined with cowl to catch the slightest breeze and carry it into the cool, vaulted *sirdabs* amongst their foundations. For such is South Iraq; a land where, without artificial contrivances, human life is barely tolerable for one half of the year and may only be supported through the recollection and confident anticipation of the other half.

North Iraq corresponds to the province of Assyria and again has a character of its own. Framed in a crescent of mountain country, it consists of the fertile valleys of the Tigris and its tributaries, with undulating uplands between. To the west is Al Jazīrah—a desolate and uncultivable steppe, separated from the Syrian Desert only by the Euphrates and the narrow defile through which it flows. Climatically Assyria is distinguished from the southern provinces by a more plentiful rainfall in winter, which is sufficient to produce a crop without irrigation, and in a good spring the pasturelands are a credit to the Assyrian god of vegetation. There are no date-palms here, but fruit in abundance, while terraced cultivation in the foothills produces vines and tobacco. The villages too are terraced and their low roofs recede in horizontal arpeggios against a fine counterpoint of slim poplars. The mountain country, which differs little from eastern Turkey and the contingent districts of Iran, grows a little timber. The winter snows among the scrub oak are patterned with the pink feet of *chikor* or trodden by pig and ibex. The Kurdish tribes who dwell there, as well as the Yezidis in the hills north of Mosul, will become familiar in later chapters. Both they and the country in which they live are best seen through the eyes of Rich and Layard.

In the nineteenth century there were half a dozen routes by which a European traveller could reach Baghdad, yet none of them, strangely enough, exactly corresponded to the approaches most generally used to-day. The new metalled road crossing the Syrian Desert from Haifa, and the Damascus track used by the principal transport companies before it, take a direct line which had no precedent before 1921; while the routes which the railway follows to Baghdad to-day, both from Aleppo and from Basrah, would have

been impracticable for caravans in the last century owing to the insecurity of the tribal areas through which they pass. One need, of course, hardly mention the air-route following the road, which has given so many of our own generation their first sight of Mesopotamia—in map form, with the bridges and minarets of the capital racing up out of the distance almost before the miniature market-towns on the Euphrates have fallen behind. In Rich's time indeed the Company had found it essential to maintain a direct postal service with India, via Baghdad, and for this purpose had inaugurated their famous Dromedary Mail, which used a cross-desert route very nearly as direct as the present one, passing through Bîr Melossa, somewhat to the north of Rutbah Wells. These riders, however, had a technique of their own. They rode alone, unarmed and carrying no money; but two other commodities, news and tobacco, made them welcome guests in the tents of those for whom rich caravans were fair game. For ordinary travellers the way was much more circuitous. Their route from Baghdad to Basrah ran west of the Euphrates—not beside the river owing to the rapaciousness of the cultivating tribes—but out in the desert at a respectful distance. It swung westwards near Hadithah and followed approximately the direction of the modern pipe-line to Palmyra, whence more frequented tracks led to Damascus or Aleppo.

Several of our early European visitors have described this journey in detail. Tavernier, for instance, travels with a small caravan of 600 camels, Eldred with 4,000. They accomplish the journey from Aleppo to Baghdad in 25 to 36 days. Every night their camp is made like a tiny fortress against thieves—the camel-packs stacked in a circle and the camels themselves couched inside them. The travellers sit around communal cooking fires and a strict discipline is maintained by the official caravan leader. It is also interesting to find that carrier-pigeons were used to send back news of the caravan's whereabouts. Actually pigeons had been used for much the same purpose since the time of the Caliph Mahdi, who adopted this means of sending important dispatches. Later there was a highly organized pigeon-post from Baghdad to Alexandretta, with towers provided for relaying the birds every fifty miles or so. Such birds at this time were valued at from £300 to £500 apiece. Some of the famous

## FOUNDATIONS IN THE DUST

Arab breeds like the 'Basrâwi' and 'Iskanderun' types even reached England.

Aleppo was far the most common point of departure for Baghdad. Rich, for instance, we have already seen leaving that town on a longer and much more picturesque route, fording the Euphrates at Jerablus and striking north-east into the hills, to reach the Tigris at Diarbekir. This route was followed twenty years later by Buckingham,<sup>1</sup> and early in the present century by Soane<sup>2</sup> and Gertrude Bell.<sup>3</sup> In every case it carried them through Urfah, and each duly noted the vanishing remnants of Roman Edessa and the sacred fish in the 'Pool of Abraham'. The sinister basalt walls of Diarbekir to them were 'Black Amida' with its long record of sieges and massacres; from Diarbekir the land-route led to Mardîn on its cliff overlooking Mesopotamia, and so down into the plain to Nisibin and Mosul.

But a far more comfortable and leisurely means of transport for this last stage of the journey was by raft down the Tigris. These *keleks* have been used on the Tigris for at least three thousand years and in that time the technicalities of their construction and management have remained unchanged. They consist of a squadron of inflated goatskins, lashed to a wooden framework, on which the load is stacked, and they are steered by immensely long poplar sweeps tipped with cross-lathing. At the end of the journey the wood is sold and the deflated skins return on donkeys to their original point of departure. In 1907 Soane, whom Sir Arnold Wilson once described as 'an erratic genius', chose this means of travel from Diarbekir to Mosul on his first visit to Kurdistan, and in spite of adventures due to submerged rocks, bandits, and the discomfort produced by heavy rain, he afterwards spoke highly of his experience. 'There is' he says, 'an ease and comfort about it all that only the traveller fresh from the road can appreciate. The abundance of cool, clear water is the chief delight of the journey, contrasting with the ever-present trouble of the road, with its water often enough scarce, and always obtained only at the expense of considerable manual

<sup>1</sup> J. S. Buckingham, *Travels in Mesopotamia*, 2 vols., London 1827.

<sup>2</sup> E. B. Soane, *To Mesopotamia and Kurdistan in Disguise*, London 1912.

<sup>3</sup> G. L. Bell, *Amurath to Amurath*, London 1924.

labour. The dust and filth, the long, wearying stages, the trouble of loading and unloading and of seeking food in obscure bazaars when one is dead tired, the awakening from a sleep all too short in the dark before dawn, all these are past, and all there is to do is to lie at full length upon the bales and give oneself up to the luxury of pure laziness and enjoyment of the view.' He adds that: 'The few Europeans who have adopted this pleasant method of travelling usually hired half the raft, erecting a booth or tent and carried a cook and servants, travelling tranquilly, with no more to do than admire the scenery and take snapshot photographs.' He himself had to be content with an improvised shelter of calico and a bed among the bales of dried apricots, which somewhat lost its attraction after a storm of rain. Yet his description of the remarkable scenery through which the river passes before entering Iraq below Jazīrat ibn 'Omar is probably worth considerably more than the snapshot photographs of his contemporaries. Particularly the gorge at Hassan Kaif is something which, strangely enough, one has never heard described elsewhere, though it sounds as if Soane were justified in calling it 'one of the most remarkable sights the Tigris has to offer'. He says:

The right bank of the river rose in a vertical cliff to a great height, and was faced across the broad stream by a fellow cliff not so high, but honey-combed with cave-dwellings. . . . Most remarkable of all were the great piers of a once colossal bridge, that, springing from a lower point of the cliff, or rather from a spot upon its slope down to the foreshore, spans the space to the opposite cliff, bridging the Tigris further south than any stone bridge. Here the stream is broad and deep, and the mighty piers that tower above and shadow the passer-by in his humble *kelek*, speak volumes for the perseverance and talent of people past and gone, and, by comparison, the qualities of the Ottomans. And on both sides, on the left or east bank, where the cliff growing ever lower still hedges the river, and on the west where receding it leaves a fertile foreshore, the faces are pierced with cave-dwellings, rock forts that communicate with one another. Curious chambers, open at the river-side, mere eeries, looked down upon the stream, and it is only a near approach that reveals the mode of access, a passage diving into the rock. From the village above a staircase has been cut, zigzagging down the cliff face to where the river laps the solid rock wall. . . .

## FOUNDATIONS IN THE DUST

It seems probable that since Soane's time few Europeans and equally few educated Turks have ever visited this extraordinary place.<sup>1</sup>

Starting from Aleppo other comparatively modern travellers like Gertrude Bell, on her journey described in *Amurath to Amurath*, preferred the descent of the Euphrates and the route followed by so many invading armies in historical times. This again is the most interesting approach and to-day the fast motoring-road to Der ez Zor, and the passable track down the right bank of the river into Iraq, make the journey by car a simple one. Particularly striking is the evidence of a natural boundary at almost exactly the point where the modern frontier crosses the Euphrates. Here the cultivation, which, since the confluence of the Khabur tributary, has extended far out on either side of the river, abruptly ceases and the valley acquires an air of barren desolation with no village or foliage to be seen anywhere. By the time the Iraqi post at Husaibah is reached, the dust and gravel of the Jazīrah on the left and of the Shamiyah Desert on the right have drawn in almost to the water. Then there is a ruined Parthian watch-tower on a low hill, the walls and ramparts of a Roman *castellum* and a prehistoric mound surmounted by the remains of what was probably an Assyrian military post, after which narrow strips of cultivation and eventually the first date-palms begin to reappear. One has indeed not only crossed the modern frontier of Iraq, but also the Roman *limes* and the age-old limits of Assyria. From here to the cleft in the hills just above Ramâdi, which Xenophon called 'The Gates' and where in fact the river finally flows out into the alluvial plain, is a distance of about 120 miles. Along the whole of this way it runs through a fertile but extremely narrow valley, mostly confined by escarpments on either side. Here is a succession of small but very ancient fortified cities: Anah, Tilbis, and Hît, built originally on islands in mid-stream, and others such as Rawah, on the banks, protected by fortresses on the escarpment above. Anah, the largest settlement of all, has long ago overflowed from the island on to the right bank, but there finds the space between the river and the escarpment so restricted that to-day it straggles for several

<sup>1</sup> During the period between wars a bare half-dozen foreigners (the writer amongst them) had been permitted by the Turkish authorities to visit Diarbekir and Mârdîn.

miles along the bank. One observes that both here and also at Tilbis the problem of burying the dead had at certain times in the past become formidable, for there was no room for graves on the island and the flat land beside it provided barely sufficient space for fruit and vegetable gardens. Sometimes the problem has been solved by hollowing out chambers in the soft stone of the cliff. Elsewhere the graveyards mount awkwardly up on to the high desert above.

The last stage of the journey to Baghdad by this route would normally be eastwards along the 'Issa canal and so past the ruins of 'Aqar Qûf to the Tigris. Gertrude Bell, however, had crossed to the right bank of the Euphrates at Anah, and at Hit struck off southwards in search of a new desert-way to Al 'Ukhaidir.

Rich's second approach was, as we have seen, from the south, and Mary's first sight of Iraq was the Shatt al 'Arab. From Basrah the journey to Baghdad continued by water up the Tigris, and even the comparative amenities of the Residency yacht can hardly have compensated for the tedium of its slow pace against the current and the monotony of what little landscape was visible beyond the banks. With the yacht tied up for the night, she had her first sight of Arab villagers who gathered to pay their respects and to satisfy their curiosity. The sheikh of the Muntafiq gave Claudius a dignified and impressive reception in his reed-built *madhîf*. In a letter home Mary described the tribesmen as 'dark, wild, and savage-looking', and gave an account of their dress, ending rather surprisingly with the words —'but on going into battle they put on a shirt of mail and helmet in which they fasten two white ostrich feathers'.

Rich made his entry into Baghdad with a little discreet ostentation. He rode at the head of his sepoy guard who were also mounted, and behind came Mary in a mule-borne palankeen with a bodyguard of Armenian servants. They were received at the Residency by Hine, the surgeon, who had for some time been Acting-Resident.

### Chapter Three

## THE RESIDENCY

IN the early years of the last century the limits of the Ottoman Pashalik of Baghdad corresponded approximately to those of modern Iraq. In theory the Baghdad government was of course directly responsible to Istanbul, but in practice it exercised a degree of autonomy varying in direct relationship to the character of the contemporary Pasha and his capacity for ignoring the importunities of the Porte. At this time, in Istanbul and throughout the Empire, the declining virility of the Turkish ruling-class had resulted in the rise to power of a slave-dynasty, and here as in Egypt the monopoly of government had passed into the hands of Georgian Mamluks. So it was with the last four of the great Mamluk Pashas of Baghdad, Sulaiman-the-Little, Abdullah, Sa'id, and Da'ûd, that Rich was to find himself associated. The spectacular downfall of the dynasty at the end of Da'ûd's reign he was unfortunately not destined to see.

The Arabs of Iraq meanwhile were now entering upon their seventh century of foreign oppression and their fortunes had reached a very low ebb indeed. Longrigg's<sup>1</sup> description of the Pashalik at this time gives some impression of the groaning misgovernment to which the country was subjected. He says:

Of government in general, a true picture would indeed give prominence to the endemic tribal disobedience with which it was every year's task to deal—to robber-bands unsuppressed, travellers impoverished by way-side blackmail—to ruthless taxation of the few accessible, powerlessness to touch the rest. Towns and lands were still sold to be governed by this or that favourite slave or genial courtier, Aghas still bullied, troopers still raped and robbed. . . . The revenue of the Pashalik was collected by expedients of various age and origin, some survivals of feudal usage and some devised newly by the latest Pasha. His Customs, varying at his whim, were a source of gain less vexatious to trade and travel than the wayside tolls of every Shaikh and village headman; the farms of

<sup>1</sup> S. H. Longrigg, *Four Centuries of Modern Iraq*, Oxford 1925, p. 252.

## THE RESIDENCY

Sanjak, canal or tribal territory, brought to the Treasury but a fraction of what was squeezed from the ultimate payers, who suffered the more as they were weak and accessible. The poll-tax of Jew and Christian was collected with many abuses, by the highest bidder. Further sums accrued by taxes on goods in transit, by state monopoly in the commonest trades, by falsified exchange rates and corrupted coinage.

A corollary to this open extortion was the very considerable state in which the Pasha himself lived and conducted the government. In the Sarai the brilliant uniforms and good bearing of the Janissary Guards and Georgian attendants, the impression of finished luxury in furniture and appointments combined with the elaborate official ceremony were described by European visitors as 'a state perfectly that of a royal prince'. The Pasha's personal retainers, as in Istanbul, insisted upon their traditional titles of office—Masters of the Wardrobe, the Coffee, the Sweetmeats, the Harness, the Carpets, the Laving Water, the Drinking Water, the Pipe, the Standard, Riding Abroad, etc., etc. The Georgian bodyguard was, of course, a full-scale military force.

Yet all this outward pomp and ostentation availed nothing against the accumulating symptoms of a rotten administration. The medieval tyranny of foreign slaves had become an anachronism whose existence could not indefinitely be prolonged in a changing world. Most significant of all was the increasing contact of the Ottomans with Europe, and the intrusion of the European powers in the affairs of the Middle East. In Britain, Baghdad was regarded as a possible stage on Napoleon's road to the conquest of India, and this alone would have been sufficient to justify adequate representation at the Pasha's court. French attempts, so far unsuccessful, to anticipate this by establishing a paramount influence in local politics were an added incentive. Meanwhile the Pashas themselves had no reason for being averse to this new contact. They were becoming increasingly conscious of India as a great neighbour, a subject for measured diplomacy and a source of military supplies. In this way the omens were by no means unfavourable to Rich's arrival, and, as it proved, a better man for the post could hardly have been chosen.

Calling privately at the Sarai to present his credentials, Rich was

## FOUNDATIONS IN THE DUST

received with great politeness, but was not impressed by the personality of the Pasha, whom he described afterwards as 'no great things'. In any case for the moment both he and Mary were preoccupied with the business of settling into their new house. The house used at that time as the British Residency faces the river between the two bridges and is to-day an hotel. For the author, writing these pages on the terrace of a similar house further down the river and with a background of sixteen years intermittent residence in Iraq, there is a temptation to take for granted many things about Baghdad which to Mary Rich must have seemed unfamiliar and even disconcerting. She says:

This is a large and handsome house perfectly in the Turkish style. It consists of three different courts, one of which belongs to me—the harem, my place of confinement, and it is the most comfortable, retired part of the house. I have one large, handsome sitting-room which I have made the library and breakfast parlour, and where I always sit and receive my great visits. There are no less than six other small, comfortable rooms with a fine, large open gallery all round and an open courtyard. These apartments are perfectly separate from the other part of the house, which I never visit till the evening when business is over. The weather is now so warm we dine on the terrace, and in less than a month the heat will become so intolerable, that we shall be obliged to sleep in the open air, as no person in Bagdad could bear a close room in the hot months. The view I have of the renowned city is not the most beautiful. The streets are extremely narrow and the whole town is built of sun-baked bricks which gives it a very dirty appearance. There is nothing at all splendid about Bagdad. . . .<sup>1</sup>

In 1808 this was probably not an unfair appraisal of Rusafah, the medieval left-bank successor of Mansur's Round City. Baghdad indeed had not yet sunk to the extreme of ruinous decrepitude which resulted from the flood of 1830, and the town walls with their gates were still preserved in a reasonably intact condition. Yet over a century more was to elapse before the first *route carrossable*, now called Al Rashîd Street, was cut through the maze of rotting houses and narrow alleyways from end to end of the town. Even to-day this street has a character dictated by climatic extremity, for the

<sup>1</sup> Alexander, *Baghdad in Bygone Days*, p. 33.

## THE RESIDENCY

buildings on either side are built out over the footwalks to protect pedestrians from the sun, so that it runs between two-mile-long colonnades of concrete pillars. For the same reason, in the narrower and more ancient alleyways the wooden upper storeys of the houses are corbelled out until they nearly meet, and their opposed windows make privacy practically unattainable. But these are the outer rooms used by the tenants for receiving their friends. The rooms used by the family have no outer windows and obtain their light from the court round which the house is built. In these days the reception rooms at least of such houses will be furnished in something approaching the western manner. There is a time-lag in taste which varies between the 'New Art' phase of 1910 and the Paris Exhibition of 1928, and all but the carpets is extremely shoddy. The whole house receives its character from the hideous locally-made tiles with which the floors are paved and a universal preference for excremental-coloured paint. Loosely crocheted doilies on rickety coffee tables, home-worked velvet anti-maccassars, framed photographs of Turkish times and surprising supplements from illustrated papers are accessories. In the private part of the house a middle-class family still often squats, eats, and sleeps on the floor. In summer it spends the heat of the day in a vaulted *sirdab* and sleeps at night on the flat roof. Between the two is a steep tiled staircase, up and down which some humble dependent or unmarried female relative is forever clattering in her wooden pattens. Yet the few 'large and handsome houses, perfectly in the Turkish style', which still survive, have an undeniable graciousness. Balconies around their open courts are supported on carved wooden columns; downstairs rooms have finely-proportioned vaulting in cut brickwork and the ceilings of the principal saloons above are often ornamented with a delicate geometrical fretwork of wood, inlaid with a mosaic of mirror-glass. Carved wooden grilles in the windows of the family apartments and wrought-ironwork from Mosul are not uncommon.

Mary was also right about the summer heat, which became an increasing affliction to her and Rich during the years which followed. One July day when Buckingham<sup>1</sup> was a guest in their house, he ascertained the shade temperature 'by the scales of two excellent

<sup>1</sup> Buckingham, Vol. II, p. 214.

## FOUNDATIONS IN THE DUST

thermometers, carefully examined and compared' at a two p.m. maximum of 122 degrees and a minimum at dawn of 112 degrees. In 1820, after he had returned to Calcutta, he received a letter from Rich in which he mentioned: 'So extraordinarily bad was our last summer, so fearfully exceeding anything you experienced here (though *you* had a tolerable specimen of our climate), that I had, at one time, intended to send you an account of it for publication. . . .' To-day scientific invention and experience have gone a long way towards moderating the appalling discomfort of life in such a climate. Air-conditioning, electric fans, refrigerators, fly-screens, and insecticides are contributions of the former, which have not yet entirely superseded more traditional devices such as sunken rooms, tiled floors, porous water-coolers, windows protected with watered camel-thorn and above all the strict régime of a house opened completely to the night air, hermetically closed and darkened during the day. Offices open at seven a.m. and close at one p.m. In the afternoon the city withdraws to its *sirdabs* to sleep. Between five and six it reassembles on balconies, in coffee shops and public gardens, and retires early to bed beneath mosquito-nets on the roof-tops.

The Rich family on principle only left the house between five a.m. and their seven o'clock breakfast. The remainder of the day was spent in the *sirdabs* until about six o'clock they emerged fully dressed for dinner on the terrace. Here they spent the evening and apparently slept. Buckingham says:<sup>1</sup> 'From the terrace of Mr. Rich's residence, which was divided into many compartments, each having its separate passage of ascent and descent, and forming, indeed, so many unroofed chambers, we could command at the first opening of the morning, just such a view of Bagdad as is given in the "Diable Boiteux" of Madrid, showing us all the families of Bagdad, with their sleeping apartment, unroofed, and those near our own abode often in sufficiently interesting situations.'

Winter days were planned rather differently. Once the first rains had laid the dust and the mud had dried, riding and even walking became possible and most mornings were spent in this way. Mary rode a donkey and was compelled for the purpose to adopt local costume—a black veil, and the *charchaf*, an all-enveloping blue

<sup>1</sup> *ibid.* p. 192.

## THE RESIDENCY

checked sheet from which only her feet emerged in yellow half-boots. Much of Rich's business was done in the afternoon and dinner was at four o'clock. For this meal he appeared on all occasions fully dressed, and Mary's views on the subject appear in a letter to her sister in Bombay: 'I know your idea is that there is no occasion to dress for dinner when there is no company; but let me tell you this is the way to treat your husband very cavalierly—to think that as no one dines with you, your dirty morning gown will do. If I did not come down as well-dressed as I should be in Bombay at a party of fifteen or twenty persons, Mr. Rich would be extremely angry!'<sup>1</sup>

Poor Mary! After spending a good part of the day in complete seclusion, or wrestling with language difficulties amongst her servants and callers, the elaborate preparation for the moment when she emerged into the public part of the house to sip 'a kind of sherry' from Shiraz before dining alone with her husband, must have been a comparatively pleasant part of her daily routine. As time went on, her demands on Bombay for clothes became more frequent and her wardrobe more elaborate: '24 shifts, petticoats, nightshifts, caps, and morning gowns; 24 shirts of cambric; fine lino for evening gowns, or fine muslin worked purposely. A few pocket handkerchiefs of palmacotta muslin; 1 dozen pair long sleeves, plain and muslin; one dozen short gloves and some nail brushes. I have just received 20 pair shoes from Calcutta, but please order me another dozen all kid and English made. The colours I like are black, purple, olive and doree.' And later: 'two oilskin umbrellas from the China warehouse, and four or five pair stays, boned in front and laced behind, also morning gowns, high in the neck, in nainsook or fine cord muslin, and two coloured gowns.' Claudius himself seems to have been equally fastidious: '12 pair Irish *linnen* trowsers particularly high in the waist, very full and large in the legs. 2 dozen pair white nankeen pantaloons with tyes at the ankles, to come extremely high also in the waist.  $\frac{1}{2}$  dozen shirts, which must be made of cambric muslin and *not of longcloth*: He cannot wear coarse shirts, and his trowsers *must* only be of Irish linen.'<sup>2</sup>

The hours after dinner at the Residency were occupied with books

<sup>1</sup> Alexander, p. 68.

<sup>2</sup> *ibid.* pp. 65, 66.

## FOUNDATIONS IN THE DUST

and music, and sometimes Mary read aloud while Claudius drew or painted. Books came in packages from one of Mary's uncles who was proprietor of the *Morning Post*, but Bombay had to supply a variety of other needs. 'Please send a chess-board and men, and also a new flute for Claudius. Can you procure us a Wedgwood's copying machine, if there is such a thing in Bombay . . .'

From their first year in Baghdad onwards the Riches developed the habit of spending some weeks in autumn and spring in a camp on the banks of the Tigris at Ghararah about five miles below Baghdad. This made a welcome break in the formal routine of life at the Residency just before and after the hottest part of the year. It is not difficult to imagine how greatly Mary at least must have always looked forward to this release from the city during the period when the climate of Iraq disarmingly reverts to being one of the pleasantest in the world. For Ghararah can be very beautiful. Where the last suburbs are left behind, the river swings westwards and returns, making a narrow-necked loop entirely filled with orchards and palm-groves. It was here, in this quiet oasis of deep foliage and tranquil rustic life, that a century later Gertrude Bell discovered the solace of her friend Haji Naji's garden. In more recent years the ideal setting which it provides for an early-morning ride or an evening picnic, its nightingales and cathedrals of fruit-blossom in springtime, have earned for it among British residents the nostalgic if somewhat banal name of 'Devonshire'.

In local politics meanwhile Claudius had been 'showing the flag' to some purpose. His command of languages and experience of Turkish and Arab psychology gave him self-confidence in dealing with local notables, while his personal charm made a direct approach practicable. His fearless integrity and passion for justice at first puzzled his associates but did not finally fail to impress them. Within months of arriving in Baghdad his reputation exceeded that of any foreigner in the Pashalik and French prestige was effectively eclipsed. With the Pasha himself however there was bound from the beginning to be friction. The comparative success with which he had browbeaten Rich's predecessors, Manesty and Harford Jones, suggested no reason for giving the new Resident any special con-

## THE RESIDENCY

sideration. Rich, on the other hand, had a conviction that in dealing with an Oriental, and especially a Turk, little was to be gained by temporizing or submission. 'Nothing' he once wrote to his father-in-law, 'but the most decisive conduct will do; any other will increase the insolence of his disposition.' Criticizing previous British policy in the Ottoman dominions, he said:

I am far from being an advocate of force and violence, but the weak line of conduct we have pursued is eminently prejudicial to our honour and interests, and will, I fear, be long felt by our representatives in the Ottoman Dominions. For I am certain that the Turks consider our lenity and forbearance as arising solely from fear and inability.<sup>1</sup>

In taking a strong line now, Rich relied for support at first on Bombay, unwisely as it proved, and afterwards, when a British Ambassador to the Porte was appointed, with greater confidence, on Istanbul.

There is no need to follow the stages in the development of Claudius's quarrel with the Pasha. During the summer of 1809 the latter had become abusive, insolent, and threatening and things came to a head in October while the Riches were in camp at Ghararah. The Pasha, hearing they were about to return to the Residency, refused them admission to the city and threatened their servants with the bastinado if they continued to serve them. All through the exchanges which followed Rich seems to have been in his element, for he wrote to Mackintosh: 'The Residency at Baghdad has become a desirable post to me owing to all its difficulties.'<sup>2</sup> Unfortunately the arguments which led to the eventual intimidation of Little Sulaiman are unknown to us, but by the end of the year Rich had succeeded in completely turning the tables. His family party were escorted back to the city by the Pasha's own bodyguard of 300 Georgians and he himself given a ceremonial audience in which his title of Resident with all its prerogatives was publicly acknowledged in the most unequivocal terms.

Considering Rich's age and the fact that he had brought about this triumph entirely by his own exertions, it is perhaps understandable that he should have now proceeded to increase the ostentation

<sup>1</sup> *ibid.* p. 41.

<sup>2</sup> *ibid.* p. 58.

## FOUNDATIONS IN THE DUST

of his entourage in a manner compatible with his newly established prestige. At the Residency the sepoy guard of thirty men under a *subahdar* had already become an institution and remained so for nearly a century after his death. But in addition to these he now formed a troop of European hussars from discharged soldiers of various nationalities whom he collected in Baghdad. A European farrier also appeared on his staff (since he did not approve of the Turkish method of shoeing), and, for Mary's convenience, a *maître d'hôtel*. As might be expected, these and other increased liabilities were not easily comprehensible to a basically commercial establishment like the East India Company, and Rich was in continual financial difficulties owing to their parsimony. He complains above all that no definite salary and allowances were fixed for him before leaving Bombay. His own ideas as to the scale of permissible expenditure were fairly definite. 'Could I' he says, 'obtain allowances of 3000 rupees per mensem for expenses of the Residency and 1500 or even 1000 as salary, I would be well contented. The allowances would enable me to live handsomely as a public representative ought to do; while my salary would be secured to me without the possibility of my breaking in upon it, and would be accumulating in the Agent's hands! To keep up the present establishment, I cannot possibly manage with less than 2,500. The Company's allowances are inadequate.'<sup>1</sup> The Company's allowances, in fact, remained inadequate all through his stay in Baghdad. He had enemies in Bombay and it will be seen later that he was at times treated extremely shabbily.

Yet if the British Government could have been brought to realize the unique position of authority and respect attained by this individual Englishman, and the widespread influence of his reputation throughout the whole of Turkish Arabia, they must needs have considered his services to be cheap at any price. In Baghdad the Pasha himself had now incurred the serious displeasure of the Porte and was in a position to request Rich's intervention on his behalf. He was too late, however, for a *firmân* deposing him had been followed up by a direct incitement to the tribes and provincial governors to take the law into their own hands. Raiding parties

<sup>1</sup> *ibid.* p. 61.

## THE RESIDENCY

reached the very gates of Baghdad and the city was in an unreliable mood.

The Riches had withdrawn to their camp at Ghararah where, in the middle of so much disturbance, they were suddenly visited by General Sir John Malcolm, returning from a diplomatic mission to the Court of the Shah. He received a great welcome from his hosts and was indeed the first of a long series of distinguished guests who afterwards wrote in superlative terms of the Riches' hospitality. 'We pass our time very pleasantly here,' he observed. 'We have races every morning, games of chess after breakfast and in the evening swim in the Tigris and play bowls.' And before he departed: 'I shall leave Baghdad with very warm feelings towards the Residency. Mr. Rich is a young man of extraordinary attainments, and his fair lady a most decided favourite of mine.' Two episodes during his visit must have impressed him with Rich's confident authority in Baghdad. First, when a Residency official was robbed on the road, Rich took his hussars and, with Malcolm's officers, galloped ten miles out into the desert to subdue the raiding party and recover the money. Secondly, when one of the Pasha's ministers appeared with his retinue in full retreat before a punitive force, Rich gave him sanctuary and afterwards successfully interceded for his life. The Pasha himself, however, had by now already been killed.

At the end of 1811 the Riches had a visit which afterwards became a landmark in their early life in Baghdad. This was from Mary's fifteen-year-old sister, Kitty Mackintosh. Her parents had returned to England on leave and Sir Gore Ouseley, the new British minister to Persia, had agreed to chaperone Kitty as far as Bushire. There, of course, Mary had arranged to meet her, and Claudius, combining business with pleasure, accompanied her as far as Basrah, in very high spirits at leaving Baghdad. Meanwhile the Ouseleys had left Kitty in the hands of a Mrs. Bruce at Bushire and, in the way young girls have, she had got herself engaged to a young naval officer whom she had met on the boat. Mary was considerably shocked that Kitty's fiancé, who was described as 'impecunious though a baronet', should not have first addressed himself to her father. Yet later, when informed, Sir James made no bones about agreeing to

## FOUNDATIONS IN THE DUST

this simple solution of Kitty's future, and she became Lady Wiseman. For the moment, however, Wiseman remained on duty and Kitty joined the Riches on the return journey up the Tigris in their yacht.

From Claudius and Mary's almost hysterical enjoyment of this visit one may perhaps gauge the austerity of their normal life, soured as it was by financial difficulties and unending political intrigues. The waggish and whimsical phrases of contemporary frivolity sound strangely now, but suggest much-needed relaxation. Mary writes: 'Kitty and Claudius are making such a noise, they are fighting, sparring and kissing from morning to night, and consider me a common enemy, because I sometimes venture to call them to order. Kitty so adores him that I have called her "the little sycophant". I flatter myself that Claudius is as fascinating now as ever he was in Bombay. I tell him he is an impudent Irishman and requires to be a little taken down!'<sup>1</sup> Nevertheless, in their spare time they also united to improve her education. She read history with Mary, while Claudius was teaching her music and drawing, also helping her with Italian and French.

Kitty's visit also provided an opportunity for Rich's first excursion to Babylon. From his arrival in Baghdad he had interested himself in archaeology and laid the foundation of what afterwards became a considerable collection of antiquities and manuscripts. An examination of the site of Babylon was an enterprise which he had long promised himself, and in the closing weeks of 1811 he completed the arrangements. The journey, which to-day is an easy two hours motoring, took two days. As a result of Rich's importance and the new Pasha's fear for his safety, the party became something of a cavalcade, the escort, as Rich himself records,<sup>2</sup> consisting of 'my own troops of Hussars, with a galloper gun, a havildar, and twelve sepoy; about seventy baggage mules, a mehmandar from the Pasha, and a man from the Sheikh of the Jirbah Arabs. . . .' Mary travelled in a palankeen;<sup>3</sup> Kitty rode her new pony which Claudius had bought

<sup>1</sup> *ibid.* p. 82.

<sup>2</sup> *Narrative of a Journey to the Site of Babylon*, London 1839, p. 1.

<sup>3</sup> This was the *takhterawân*, or mule-born litter, now extinct in Iraq. The only surviving examples which the writer has ever seen were at the monastery called *Der Za'ferân*, near Mardîn, where two were preserved in the chapel crypt. But these were ceremonial affairs, heavily upholstered and ornamented.

## THE RESIDENCY

and broken for her, but a second palankeen was provided in case she got tired. The journey, as Kitty afterwards described it, is 'tedious travelling' at the best of times, and even Rich found little to record except periodical *khâns* and the principal irrigation canals. The party was met outside Hillah by a deputation which included the Governor's private band 'of double drums and zoormas,<sup>1</sup> or Turkish hautboys'.

During the ten days or so which followed, Rich accomplished a more intelligent and thorough examination of the ruins of Babylon than any that had till then been made, visiting, sketching and even approximately surveying the entire group of mounds on the left bank of the Euphrates, 'Amrân 'Ali, Al Qasr and Babil, which we now know to represent the temples and palaces of the Inner City. He watched gangs of Arabs from Hillah excavating Babylonian baked bricks for building purposes and had no difficulty with their help in obtaining good specimens of brick-inscriptions. At Babil he employed workmen of his own to investigate the underground cavities which appeared among the ruins of the Summer Palace, and there was great excitement when they encountered 'a skeleton in a coffin'. He watched while 'piece by piece they pulled out the coffin and the bones' (not a very conventional procedure by modern archaeological standards). The famous stone lion was as usual disinterred from the sand drifts for his benefit, and he ended his tour with an expedition to Birs Nimrod, where, like most modern visitors, he was amazed at the vitrified masses of brickwork crowning the ruins of the great tower. The whole of his investigations he afterwards made the subject of a memoir which was first published in the Viennese journal *Mines de l'Orient*.

There would be no point here in enumerating Rich's theories, speculations, and deductions. Thirteen years meticulous excavation by German scientists at the beginning of the present century have eclipsed their interest, without obscuring the fact that the Germans themselves owed much to Rich's original initiative. For it was un-

<sup>1</sup> It is a mark of Rich's musical interests that he realized that this instrument, which bears little outward resemblance to the European one of the same name, is in fact an hautboy. It has a double reed and a conical bore, i.e. overblows at an octave.

## FOUNDATIONS IN THE DUST

doubtedly the interest aroused by the publication of Rich's *Memoir* in 1812 which gave the initial impulse to Mesopotamian archaeology. Together with its sequel it even inspired the parenthetical lines in Byron's *Don Juan*.<sup>1</sup> 'Though Claudius Rich, Esquire, some bricks has got, and written lately two memoirs upon't.'

Soon after the Riches return to Baghdad, Sir William Wiseman arrived and he and Kitty were married. When she eventually left with her husband for Bombay she had just turned sixteen. After their departure, life at the Residency resumed its now familiar routine. Sulaiman Pasha's successor, Abdullah, had been treacherously murdered by the Muntafiq and his place had been taken by Sulaiman's son, Sa'id, whose life Rich had contrived to save from the vengeance of Abdullah. The result was a satisfactorily cordial relationship with the Sarai. At the same time Sir James Mackintosh, after arriving in London, had pleaded with the Directors of the Company for a more sympathetic treatment of his son-in-law, and dispatches from Bombay were becoming correspondingly less unreasonable. Any satisfaction, however, which Mary might have felt on these two counts was minimized by her anxiety about Claudius's health. Reaction to the heat of successive summers, culminating in a serious attack of fever, had reduced him to a state of lethargic depression most unfamiliar in one of his temperament and baffling even to Mr. Hine. Finally, the only reasonable remedy seemed to be a holiday in Europe, so Rich applied for and was granted three months' leave. He and Mary left Baghdad in October 1813, travelling at first by barouche and later riding with the *tatar* couriers. Mary 'for greater comfort and safety was dressed as a *tatar* youth'.

<sup>1</sup> Canto V, 62.

## Chapter Four

### BUCKINGHAM

THE Riches' departure for Europe and their prolonged absence from Baghdad seems here to afford an occasion for another considerable digression. So we may leave them for the moment toiling through the mountain passes of Asia Minor towards Istanbul, and follow a new cross-thread in the tapestry of Mesopotamian exploration; the eastward journey of another traveller whose goal was the Residency at Baghdad.

Before leaving for Europe the Riches had heard with much curiosity of the doings of Lady Hester Stanhope. This remarkable middle-aged English woman, careering about Syria dressed as a Mamluk and 'with a considerable suite of gentlemen', at first seemed a little shocking to Claudius's orientalized sense of propriety, yet he afterwards found her a stimulating correspondent. Staying in Lady Hester's house at the beginning of 1816 was James Silk Buckingham, whose name has occurred in an earlier chapter. He seems likely at this time to have received through his hostess the introduction to Rich, which eventually brought him to the Residency on his way to India. The description of his journey, which he afterwards<sup>1</sup> published, is dedicated to Lady Hester, whom he considered 'one of the brightest ornaments of her sex and station'.

Buckingham was then thirty years of age. His character is to-day particularly satisfying to contemplate because it typifies a whole generation of Englishmen without whose memory posterity would be a great deal the poorer. His personality as well as his writings received much publicity some years later, as a result of his ultimate success in a truly monumental action for slander, which lasted nearly four years and cost several people, including himself, more than they could afford.

The story is certainly a remarkable one and the eventual outcome of the case was at the time evidently considered of some consequence,

<sup>1</sup> J. S. Buckingham, *Travels in Mesopotamia*, London 1827.

## FOUNDATIONS IN THE DUST

since the attention of the House of Commons was drawn to the obvious reflection which it implied upon the integrity of the Indian Government. From Buckingham's own point of view it had absorbed almost the whole of his income and energy over so long a period that his final vindication afterwards became the central fact of his life, and he may well be excused the twenty-two pages devoted to it in his last travel book.

According to his own account, it all began in the year 1816 at Jerusalem, where he made the acquaintance of a young man of his own age called Bankes. The two of them decided temporarily to join forces, and together they made a short journey to the ruined cities east of the Jordan. Both enjoyed it, and Bankes proposed adding his own sketches and comments to the more elaborate notes which Buckingham had made, for the purpose of afterwards publishing a joint memoir. On their return they parted; but during the following months Bankes several times wrote to Buckingham suggesting further journeys together to Palmyra, Baalbek and so forth.<sup>1</sup> These did not prove practicable, and in fact the two men did not meet again until five months later, when Buckingham was about to leave Aleppo for India. Up to this point their relations had been entirely cordial and, on leaving, Buckingham received from his friend a letter of introduction to the Governor of Bombay. The only circumstance which to him should have appeared a little peculiar was that Bankes asked him to return all his own letters. As it was, because he had no reason to suspect any ulterior motive behind the request, he at once complied.

On reaching India, circumstances induced Buckingham to remain there instead of returning to England; so any question of collaborating with Bankes in a publication was ruled out. Nevertheless, various prominent people in Bombay who saw Buckingham's own

<sup>1</sup> He also visited Lady Hester Stanhope at Mar Elias, and her biographer describes him as follows: 'William Bankes, the future member for Cambridge University, arrived with a portfolio of sketches under his arm, a renegade Albanian soldier as his servant, and a gold-fitted dressing-case laden with perfumes. He was the kind of conceited, self-opinionated young man with whom Her Ladyship had very little patience.' J. Haslip, *Lady Hester Stanhope*, London 1934. The 'renegade Albanian' seems likely to be a rather unfair description of Giovanni Finati, whose biography Bankes subsequently edited.

## BUCKINGHAM

notes on his travels in Transjordan and elsewhere urged that they should be published, and the manuscript was dispatched to Murray, the London publisher. Bankes, now in Egypt, seeing the newspaper announcement of the article, 'appears to have been filled with the most ungovernable rage, or jealousy', and persuaded his father in London to stop its publication on the grounds that Buckingham was an ignorant charlatan who had pirated his own notes. At the same time he wrote a letter to the Governor of Bombay requesting that Buckingham be discountenanced and proscribed in India.

Murray, rather surprisingly, agreed to withhold publication of the article, but Buckingham approached Longman & Co., and was able to produce such undisputed proof of its authenticity that Longman published it. Bankes's reaction to its appearance in print was an anonymous article in the *Quarterly Review* containing an even more violent attack on Buckingham's character. This article, when it reached India, was made a pretext by Buckingham's enemies for calling upon the Government to expel him from the country, and the Government being plainly disposed to comply, 'the floodgates of calumny were opened, and every species of atrocity attempted towards me by the favoured minions of power'. Figuratively squaring his shoulders and thrusting out his chin, Buckingham continues: 'I sought my remedy where an Englishman should be always proud to meet his opponents, and where I have never yet shrunk from mine, in a British court of justice.'<sup>1</sup>

His case as a plaintiff had in fact been considerably strengthened by a curious coincidence. While Bankes was no doubt priding himself on his own ingenuity in depriving Buckingham of all the letters which would have provided him with evidence of the good terms on which they had parted in Aleppo, Buckingham had the good fortune to find a single one of them still adhering by its sealing wax to the lid of an old portmanteau. So that, although the Indian Government descended to the considerable injustice of preventing him from prosecuting his case in person, by expediting his removal from the country, a verdict was given in his favour partly on the evidence of this letter, and his calumniators very heavily censured. Since, however, he was not aware of this until some weeks after his

<sup>1</sup> Buckingham, Vol. II, p. 508.

## FOUNDATIONS IN THE DUST

arrival in England, he had time to institute three separate actions, first against the *Quarterly Review*, and secondly against Messrs. Bankes Senior and Junior.

The first two of Buckingham's opponents, having no judicial leg to stand on, climbed down with some alacrity and made no difficulties about paying costs. Bankes Junior, however, seems to have been an astonishingly tenacious personality. He resorted to every known subterfuge for prolonging the proceedings and complicating the issue. Testimonies were required from residents in India who proved to have returned in the meanwhile to England, leaving the documents behind. Living witnesses were summoned in person from Syria and Egypt without any clear idea of what their testimony was to prove. Thus in 1826, when the case came up for a final trial, over three years had elapsed since the first institution of proceedings, and both parties were practically impoverished.

The case had by now aroused widespread curiosity among the public and the court was crowded with literary and other personalities. They heard Mr. Bankes 'at length compelled to adduce his evidence before a jury of his countrymen, whose verdict, after the most patient hearing of all that could be said in his defence, stamps his character in terms, of which the record will remain as long as the Court of King's Bench shall exist'. The verdict was £400 damages for Mr. Buckingham—not a very large sum after being deprived of all his property in India.

Buckingham's journey from Aleppo to Baghdad was, as we have seen, performed alone 'without the pleasure, and advantage of a European friend, companion, interpreter, servant or attendant of any sort'. For obvious reasons of convenience 'the dress, manners, and language of the country, were adopted and continued throughout the whole of the way'. It took almost two months. One pictures him as a more than robust and heavily bearded bachelor, by no means above an occasional curious (though strictly scientific) glance at the appearance and habits of the oriental ladies whom he met on his way. His costume for the journey, in which he doubtless eventually presented himself at the Riches' breakfast-table, 'consisted of the blue cloth sherwal, jubba, and benish, of the Arab costume; a

## BUCKINGHAM

large overhanging tarboosh, or red cap, falling over the neck and shoulders behind; a white muslin turban, and red silk sash'. His arms were 'a Damascus sabre, a Turkish musket, small carbine, and pistols, with ammunition for each'. And he adds, 'the conveniences borne on my own horse were a pipe and tobacco-bag, a metal drinking cup, a pocket-compass, memorandum-books, and ink-stand, on one side of a pair of small khoordj, or Eastern travelling bags; and on the other, the maraboot, or chain-fastenings and irons for securing the horse, by spiking him at night to the earth, on plains where there are no shrubs or trees. A small Turkey carpet, which was to serve for bed, for table and for prayers, and a woollen cloak for a coverlid during the cold nights. . . .'

Wishing to leave Aleppo in May, Buckingham found that the great regular caravan travelling to Baghdad across the Syrian Desert would not start until September. But finding a certain Haji, a Moslâwi merchant, proclaimed by the British consul, Mr. Barker, to be a person of great respectability, who was engaged in forming a smaller caravan (450 camels and about 100 asses and mules, etc.) to travel on the more circuitous route by Mardîn and Mosul, he arranged to join it. For a small consideration his baggage was to travel among the ordinary merchandise, while he with his horse and trappings only was to ride with the Haji and be treated in every way as one of his family. This brought him into close contact with the Haji's son who, as Buckingham was to discover at an early stage in the journey, had not inherited any great measure of his father's respectability.

The caravan moved due east from Aleppo approximately on the line of the modern railway. Buckingham notices the 'beehive' villages, still such a familiar feature of north Syria, where every house is divided into square compartments, each covered by a dome of mud brick. A caravan, like a train, has the disadvantage that one cannot halt at will to investigate things seen from the road. So Buckingham was denied the pleasant experience of being entertained in one of these 'domed' villages. He would have found their architecture resourceful and surprisingly attractive and the interiors of the houses very clean and orderly. The domes are built on a simple corbelling principle and the square units which they cover are often

## FOUNDATIONS IN THE DUST

grouped together with arches between to form a room of different proportion. Their purpose, of course, is to avoid using roofing-beams, which are scarce and expensive. In most large houses only the principal living-room has a flat roof and here a great archway is built across the centre in order to halve the span of the beams and reduce the size necessary. The aesthetic effect is very pleasant, especially as the greater part of the walls in these living-rooms are covered with an elaborate fretwork of relief ornament consisting of tiny ridges made with finger and thumb before the mud plaster is dry. The beehive houses thus reverse the principle which obtains in most western buildings, where only a room of major importance is covered by a dome.

The 'beehive' villages, which are the homes of Arab cultivators, were soon left behind and their place taken by encampments of Turcomans. Buckingham noticed that their women were 'remarkably clean and perfectly unveiled', and, partly because he was approaching the neighbourhood of Harran, Abraham's second home, he was reminded that the Hebrew women of the Old Testament also uncovered their faces. He recalls the story in Genesis<sup>1</sup> of Judah and his daughter-in-law, and how Tamar 'covered herself with a veil' in order to be taken for a prostitute. Once the caravan was attacked by a party of mounted tribesmen, but they were driven off by a lot of haphazard musketry and the victory celebrated with the waste of a great deal more ammunition. But for the most part, for the purpose of his journal he had to be content with fairly trivial observations, such as that about a donkey which had survived an attack by a hyena though losing 'at least an English pound of flesh' from each thigh. (He remembers hearing of Abyssinians 'cutting steaks from a live ox, sewing up the wound, and driving the beast on her journey'.) He also exaggerates a little, describing a pintailed sandgrouse as having a long thin feather projecting 'at least a foot and a half' from its tail.

As might be expected, the first *embêtement* which Buckingham encountered was over money. In Aleppo he had with him an excellent servant found for him by Lady Stanhope, but as there seemed little point in taking him further from his home he decided instead

<sup>1</sup> Genesis xxxviii.

## BUCKINGHAM

to obtain such service as he needed from members of the caravan. He accordingly arranged for a sum of money to be paid to the Haji through Mr. Barker and divided equally between his cook, groom, and one of his camel-drivers so as to assure their attention. Buckingham had been used to saddling and unsaddling his own horse, rubbing him down and generally doing for himself; so for the first few days he hardly noticed the lack of any assistance from the Haji's servants, but when he observed that this state of affairs resulted in some disrespect from his fellow-travellers he decided to bring the matter up. The servants denied all knowledge of any payment and the young Haji, when approached, indignantly refuted the suggestion that either he or his father had received any money for this purpose from Mr. Barker. So before reaching the Euphrates crossing at Bîr, Buckingham sent a courier back to Aleppo to investigate. (It should be said that this was made possible by the fact that the caravan travelled extremely slowly, the habit of those on horseback being to ride to the head of the procession and then sit drinking coffee by the wayside until the tail had passed.)

On his return the courier did not catch up with the caravan until it had reached Urfah. But he brought with him confirmation of the payment to the young Haji and a sharp rebuke to the old one. Though the latter showed every sign of being extremely angry with the boy, Buckingham could not help reflecting on this 'sad picture of Eastern integrity' since at twenty-four this young man was 'of an age when the heart is generally most inclined to revolt at anything that is base or mean. . . .' He also quotes the Arab proverb: 'If thy neighbour has been once to Mecca, suspect him; if twice, carefully avoid him; but if three times, make haste to remove from near his habitation!'

It is Buckingham's description of his stay at Urfah which first gives one some measure of his genuine relish in the Eastern manner of living. No doubt the city has greatly changed since his day; the fact alone that for a complete generation now it has been included in a military area closed to foreigners has naturally resulted in its becoming less populous and cosmopolitan. Yet before recounting Buckingham's side of the picture, it may be of interest here to present

## FOUNDATIONS IN THE DUST

for comparison some aspect of the author's own experience of a short stay in Urfah in 1938. It should be said at once that, following Buckingham's example, on this occasion also the principle was conformed to of adopting the contemporary 'dress, manners, and language of the country', inasmuch as one travelled with a Turkish companion who knew no English, carrying a manageable suitcase and wearing a part-used lounge-suit with a soft hat. After travelling a great part of the night on a lorry, one arrived in the small hours of the morning at a hotel where, unlike Buckingham's picturesque *khân*, the rooms contained four to eight beds. Since it would have been unusual for anyone to occupy one of them after 8 a.m., a full quota of sleep had to be postponed. Naturally the greater part of the daylight was spent in accumulating notes and sketches of the town and its historical buildings, but with the best-arranged day of this sort there are certain hours, such as that directly after lunch, when relaxation is natural; also the process of lobbying in the local seat of government for permission to proceed to one's next destination involves many hours of waiting for interviews. It is at these times that, with hotels providing no day time accommodation, one becomes conscious of one's western shortcomings. To the locally-born, of course, no such problem presents itself, since his hours of leisure, whatever proportion of the day they may constitute, are spent in the coffee-shop, and there he has no temptation to make himself conspicuous by reading a book. For the Westerner on such occasions, increasing familiarity with the wooden chair and fly-blown oil-cloth justifies a more anxious anticipation of evening hours enlivened with a little *râki*. Here at least he finds himself on common ground with those about him.

Yet, in retrospect, the discovery in oneself of such minor ineptitudes has in no way impaired the clear picture which remains of the town's individuality. It lies in a saddle between two hills looking southwards towards the plain and is itself an oasis, in that it owes its existence to a great fountain of clear water which the Greeks called Callirrhoe. Its waters flow in open stone channels through the streets, forming wide ornamental pools in the public gardens, and filling stone tanks in the courtyards of the principal buildings. Where there are no buildings they irrigate groves of white

## BUCKINGHAM

mulberries and much other fruit. Many of the buildings which Buckingham visited are still standing, but the city-wall has entirely disappeared, its neat ashlar masonry having doubtless proved too great a temptation to modern builders. From the ruined castle on the hill above, two isolated Corinthian columns thrust up skywards, and in the evening their shadows still creep strangely across the town. In the past Tamerlaine raised trophies upon their summits. To-day their bases are set in concrete to avoid the great disaster which, according to local tradition, will accompany their fall.

Buckingham's caravan halted outside the city-gate at a sort of 'transit-*khân*' used by merchants who did not wish to bring their goods into the city. Here the camels were unloaded and left in charge of a servant. Meanwhile the Haji, not wishing to create ill-feeling by accepting any one of the numerous invitations which he now received from friends in the town, took accommodation for his party in a large caravanserai called the '*Khân-el-Goomrook*'. Buckingham was delighted by this building, with the privacy of its small, clean rooms ranged around a paved courtyard, and the torrent of clear water which traversed it diagonally. He also remarked that 'this same stream was made contributory, also, to another convenient purpose; all the cloaca being supplied from it with a branch running under them, while it fed a little fountain in each, for the filling a small square cistern, close by the left hand of the person sitting. . . .' On the upper floor a gallery gave access to a further range of rooms occupied by weavers of fabrics and block-printers.

That evening the Haji's party enjoyed the first of a long series of entertainments. This was a dinner given by a rich local Sayyid at his finely appointed house. In his description of the guest-room Buckingham mentions 'carpeted divans', a familiar oriental amenity only remarkable for being so entirely uncongenial to western taste. But his account of the meal itself sounds really attractive, partly owing to the mention of a plentiful supply of ice brought down from the mountains.

The drinks included 'iced milk and lebben; a fine iced sherbet, made with honey, cinnamon-water, and spices; and the iced juice of pomegranates of the last year, diluted with water of roses'. Afterwards water-pipes were smoked on the roof, from which there was

## FOUNDATIONS IN THE DUST

a fine panoramic view of the entire city. On returning to the *khân*, they found another party awaiting them, given by the humbler dependants of the caravan in return for the Haji's hospitality on the road. An elementary orchestra had been improvised and two Christian pilgrims, returning from Jerusalem, were dancing in a manner which shocked Buckingham but at the same time obviously aroused his curiosity, since he cites many references both classical and modern to such dances being known in other parts of the world. The footnote on the subject grows in proportion to the text until all but two lines are displaced, and there is a great use of italics for phrases like '*certain ideas*' and '*something not to be spoken of*'.<sup>1</sup>

A general returning of calls on the following day enabled Buckingham to see something of the town. He describes the famous Pool of Abraham very much as it appears to-day. He refers to the great carp swimming in the beautifully transparent water and mentions how visitors, as an act of diversion, 'purchase vegetable leaves and scatter them on the surface, by which the fish are collected literally in heaps'. The Pool is a shallow stone tank about two hundred yards long, with flowering shrubs on one side and along the other a flight of steps, above which a screen of pillars and carved tracery gives glimpses of the courtyard of the mosque beyond. At the far end, overlooking the water, there is a charming colonnaded loggia, where, during Buckingham's visit, the Haji and his friends sat with their pipes for many pleasant hours. It was here that he listened with astonishment to a perfectly serious dissertation by an elderly Moslem on the sacred character of the fish and the failure of any known form of cooking to make them edible. At a Christian party on the previous evening he had much enjoyed a small plate of fried carp with his 'Rakhee'!

Buckingham's companions must have come in for a great deal more walking than they were accustomed to, for he seems to have insisted on exploring the town from end to end. Occasionally he was favoured with unexpected vignettes of domestic life which he duly noted in his diary. The larger lakes were often full of bathing boys, and once he came suddenly upon a party of females occupied in the same way. He was disappointed that his companions 'turned

<sup>1</sup> Buckingham, p. 104.

## BUCKINGHAM

instantly aside, and obliged me to follow them, though we might have enjoyed this picture of natural beauty unobserved, and without disturbing for a moment the supposed seclusion of those who had chosen this retreat'.

So the days at Urfah passed by with visits and entertainments, and soon the caravan was due to reform and move onwards towards Mardîn. Before he left the *khân*, Buckingham paid a long visit to the workshops of the block-printers in the upper story. He saw how the small block bearing a section of the pattern was bound to the palm of the left hand and impressed by a blow of the right fist. Noticing the clumsiness and slowness of the procedure, he explained to the printers some of the improved methods common in Europe. 'Their admiration was very powerfully excited, and the director of the establishment made me the offer of a very handsome remuneration if I would remain a few weeks at Orfah to superintend such improvements as the mechanics of the town might make, under my direction.' Charmed by the whole atmosphere of the town, Buckingham almost considered accepting the offer.

The journey to Mardîn was mainly remarkable for the rapacious exactions of the principal Arab tribe through whose territory the way lay. At the temporary headquarters of their sheikh the caravan was submitted, almost without complaint from the intimidated merchants, to what really amounted to wholesale and arbitrary looting. Buckingham, having made himself conspicuous by not fawning to these bandits in the conventional manner, had to pay a sum of a thousand piastres, or thirty pounds, in blackmail to avoid losing the contents of his saddlebags. His valuable Damascus sword he had concealed against the small of his back, but faced with the difficulty of mounting his horse, was compelled to declare it and make further payment. During this transaction the looters suddenly found themselves being looted by a marauding band of Turcomans, and a complicated fight followed, in which Buckingham joined with some relish, 'coming into grappling contact with three individuals in succession, neither of whom escaped unhurt from the struggle'. This kind of tribal extortion continued to be the principal deterrent to regular trade between the Ottoman provinces well into the present century.

## FOUNDATIONS IN THE DUST

Mardîn stands on the most southerly spur of the Turkish Mountains, looking out over Mesopotamia. From this elevation the plain appears interminable, without contour, and featureless save for the little peaks of Jebel Sinjar away to the west. It is an extravagantly beautiful town. Tradition says of its inhabitants that 'they never see a bird flying above them', which of course refers to its dramatic situation. The rocky summit of the hill forms a great boat-shaped platform upon which, in early Moslem times, a considerable fortress once stood. Buckingham and others have left engravings<sup>1</sup> showing a powerful line of towered walls against the skyline, but to-day only two or three ruined pavilions remain among a litter of fallen stones. Several hundred feet beneath, the town is terraced into the flank of the hill, and beyond the outermost line of houses there is a further drop of over a thousand feet to the plain level. The houses are built of a sort of honey-coloured limestone. This must be plentiful and easy to work, since there has grown up at some fairly recent period an almost unique tradition of craftsmanship in stone-cutting. In every building down to the meanest hovel, doorways, windows and all other prominent features are enriched with finely carved ornament—Byzantine, or, more nearly, Romanesque in character. Actually none of this work can be more than a century old, since Buckingham expressly remarks on the poor appearance of the houses, and seems only to have seen ornament in a single mosque. Like the writer, however, he must have first approached the town from the west, a little before sunset, coming over the shoulder of the hill and being confronted with an almost orange glow on the stonework of the houses against a marine blue haze over the plain. He has left a quaint drawing of the scene as it appeared to him.

Here again at Mardîn it was unnecessary for the caravan to climb up to the town itself, so the goods and baggage animals remained in a village called Soor at the foot of the hill, probably near the modern railway station. Buckingham had an introduction to the Syrian Patriarch of Mardîn, and finding that he resided not in the city itself, but in a monastery called Der Za'ferân a few miles to the east, parted from the Haji and made his way thither. Many of the Pilgrims from Jerusalem travelling with his own caravan were there

<sup>1</sup> *ibid.* Vol. I, facing p. 314.

## BUCKINGHAM

ahead of him and a big party was already in progress. He noted afterwards that 'not less than twenty jars of arrack were drank by as many persons—all of them, too, before the meal as a stimulant, and not a single cup after it'. Der Za'ferân was at that time the centre of a flourishing Christian community. To-day it is maintained by a Bishop and half a dozen monks, but much of the building has fallen into decay and the village which Buckingham mentions outside the walls is in ruins. There is a cruciform chapel with a great deal of beautiful Byzantine carving and a much depreciated library, which, however, still boasts of an enormous Syriac testament, dating from the middle of the twelfth century and with fine illustrations. Buckingham was shown this book and suspected it to be one seen by Tavernier in 1644.<sup>1</sup> He also attended morning service in the chapel, at which, like everyone else, he remained standing about four hours 'without even the indulgence of the crutches in use among the Christians of the Greek Communion'.

On moving up to Mardîn, Buckingham found the usual uncertainty as to when the caravan would be able to leave for Mosul, and was driven by an impatience, familiar to all those who have experienced this kind of journey, to make a false step. He had authority from Barker in Aleppo to travel with any *tatar* or official courier going in the same direction, so he determined to ride northwards to Diarbekir, the principal halting-place between Istanbul and Baghdad, in the hope of attaching himself to one. This afforded him an opportunity which he would otherwise have missed of seeing Diarbekir, but as luck would have it, no courier was expected for some time, and when, having lost his Kurdish guide, he took the risk of hurrying back to Mardîn alone, he found that the Haji's caravan in the meanwhile had already left.

Buckingham as usual gives a very complete account of the history and appearance of Diarbekir. But this has since been amplified with so much detail and competence by more recent travellers<sup>2</sup> that it would be out of place to recapitulate it here. Furthermore, with an airport of its own and the last link completed in the direct line from Ankara to Baghdad, it should at last become accessible to all.

<sup>1</sup> *The Six Voyages of Tavernier through Turkey into Asia*, London 1678, p. 69.

<sup>2</sup> Soane, Gertrude Bell, Wigram, etc.

## FOUNDATIONS IN THE DUST

Buckingham plainly did not enjoy his stay, owing to the disappointment which he encountered at the *tatar* headquarters and the abduction of his guide by an angry creditor. His nicest moment was probably the first sight of the city which he obtained suddenly on approaching from the Mardîn road. He says: 'It was on the moment of our coming on the brow of the slope, which here formed the southern bank of the river (Tigris), and gave us the view of the stream flowing by, that we caught the first sight of Diarbekir, which burst upon us all at once, and presented a picture of so much interest, that I voluntarily checked the bridle of my horse to dwell upon the scene; while my companions, to whom it was a familiar one, dashed across the river without heeding it for a moment. . . .' This is indeed an unforgettable sight, for the long line of jet-black fortifications seem to crouch above the Tigris gorge, guarding the approach to the mountains beyond. Buckingham has again done full justice to it with a sketch, in the foreground of which his companions are to be seen galloping full-tilt into the river.

Back in Mardîn, Buckingham reckoned the probable speed of the caravan on its journey down into the plain, and calculated that by leaving immediately he could overtake it at Nisibin. He accordingly attached himself to a horse-dealer, who appeared to have the same intention, and found himself travelling in company with 'about fifty spirited and unsaddled horses'. Minor disadvantages of the arrangement became clear at the first halt, where he spent 'a night of imperfect repose, being hourly disturbed by the breaking loose of the horses and their fighting with each other. . . .' The following day, however, his luck changed. He was suddenly overtaken by a pair of *tatars* from Istanbul carrying mail to Rich in Baghdad. They had arrived in Diarbekir on the same day as he left for Mardîn. Furthermore he had been right about the caravan, which they found halted at Nisibin, and again undergoing the hateful process of assessment for tribute by yet another tribal chief. The new arrivals at once attracted the unwelcome attention of the sheikh, and Buckingham was forced to part with the last remnants of his ready cash.

Nisibin to-day is a Turkish village contingent on the frontier with a somewhat larger Syrian market-town called Kamechlie. For here a curious corner of Syria known as the *Bec de Canard* runs eastwards

## BUCKINGHAM

to the Tigris, so that the present railway crosses two frontiers between Nisibis and Mosul. Almost nothing is left of Nisibis, the Roman fortress-city, which for a brief period became capital of Iraq;<sup>1</sup> even the ruined classical temple and other columned buildings which Buckingham drew are now no longer visible. Between the Turkish frontier and the strange isolated mountain range of Sinjar is a wide expanse of fertile upland country, slightly undulating, which in Buckingham's time was apparently mainly occupied by Yezîdis and Kurdish tribes.

He gives a fairly accurate description of the caravan's course south-eastwards from Nisibis towards the eastern foothills of Sinjar; yet on his map the Jebel Sinjar itself has slipped westwards onto the wrong side of the Jaghjagh river, and he shows the dotted course of a new and peculiar waterway, branching off from the latter and running south-eastwards to empty into the Tigris. The banks of this stream he probably intended to be the location of a curious episode which he describes on the road to Mosul.

Apparently in the Sinjar plain itself the danger from marauding bands of Yezîdis was so acute that the lesser evil of a paid tribal escort had to be resorted to. So from a point near the modern Iraqi frontier the caravan was joined by a troop of eighty armed horsemen. This stage of the journey was to be at night, so the previous day was spent encamped at a place called by Buckingham 'Romoila' (probably Rumeilân—the Little Sandhills, near Tell Kotchek station). The whole of the Haji's guest-tent was occupied by the escort, and, it now being the first week in July, beneath the cloak which Buckingham rigged up as a shelter from the sun, his 'excellent thermometer' gave a score of 126 degrees Fahrenheit. The night-march was begun with the horses and camels already thirsty, and by midnight the former were suffering considerably. It was at this point that in pitch darkness they came suddenly upon a deep stream flowing swiftly between rushes, but with a high cliff-like bank. Buckingham pictures most vividly the chaos which ensued, with the horses, unable to reach the water, plunging in with their riders or loads and some of them being swept away by the current. He him-

<sup>1</sup> Septimus Severus made it his headquarters when Parthia became a Roman province.

## FOUNDATIONS IN THE DUST

self had immense difficulty in controlling his mount, but was providentially assisted by a powerful Indian *fakîr* travelling with the caravan, who restrained the rearing and snorting animal while he himself let down a large drinking cup on a string and drew up repeated draughts of cold water. The camels meanwhile proceeded leisurely along the bank to a more convenient watering-place. This was Buckingham's first introduction to Iraq. On 6 July the caravan arrived in Mosul, but having no intention of prolonging his stay in that town, after a formal call on the Pasha and a brief visit to the mounds of Nineveh, he set out with the two *tatars*, Jonas and Ali, on the final stage of his journey.



## FOUNDATIONS IN THE DUST

severe words had their effect and, letting my horse pick its own way, I clambered round the bluff, to find Claudius waiting anxiously to see what I should do. He looked quite pale and I felt ashamed, as in our company was an unfortunate little girl, a slave who had been lately captured, about six years old, who, mounted on a horse with a halter, surmounted all difficulties without a murmur or the least assistance.'

Coming down on to the shore of the Bosphorus at Ismid some weeks later, the Riches were met by a dragoman of the British Embassy in Istanbul, bearing an invitation to stay with the Ambassador, Sir Robert Lister. The last hours of their journey along the coast-road to Scutari and across the Straits was made less comfortable by a violent snowstorm, and arriving exhausted at the Embassy they persuaded the dragoman to smuggle them in through a back door, so as to have time to recover their composure a little before meeting their host and hostess.

But now for the time being their troubles were over. They had before them the delightful experience, after five years of comparative exile, of renewing acquaintance with the cultivated and elegant life of Europe. The Listers were kindly, pleasant people, and the cosmopolitan society of Istanbul served as a stepping-stone to the splendours in store for them at Budapest, and Vienna. Mary had been nineteen when she left Bombay, and her dress-allowance on a very modest scale. Choosing a 'gala' dress for her first ball in five years must have been something of a thrill.

They had planned to continue their journey overland, but it was April before Claudius was well enough to undertake the long coach-ride through the Balkans. It took them through Bulgaria to Bucharest; then to Szeged on the modern Yugoslav frontier, across the Hungarian *puszta* to Budapest and so to Vienna. Here they remained some weeks and entered with great enjoyment into the musical-comedy world of the Hapsburg capital. At Schönbrunn they saw the Emperor return in state from a visit to Paris and drove back to find the city celebrating—almost the entire population dancing in *dirndls* and *lederhosen*. Later they were presented at court by the British minister. Mary was extremely proud of her husband, who wore a magnificent hussar uniform of french grey and silver.

## RICH'S LAST YEARS

While in Vienna the Riches heard that Sir James Mackintosh was to be in Basle at the end of September, so they travelled on through Bavaria to meet him, and a great family reunion took place. After a few days Mary went off with her father to Lucerne on a short pleasure-trip, while Claudius went on ahead to Paris. The leave granted him by the Company had expired while he was in Vienna, but anticipating a favourable reply to his request for an extension on grounds of health, he had made no arrangements for his return to Baghdad. On reaching Paris he received his first mail from India, which included a rebuke from his employers for overstaying his leave and an intimation that his allowances were to be very considerably cut. By the time Mary rejoined him, however, he was enjoying Paris and had already met and dined with the Duke of Wellington. Irascible old colonial officials in Bombay must have begun to seem fairly remote. He now, however, took the precaution of sending Mary over to London, so that she might 'make interest' for him with certain cabinet ministers to whom she would have access through her father. This expedient (a familiar one to anyone who like Rich has lived long in Baghdad) was entirely successful. Mary spent a pleasant four months at the Mackintosh house in Great George Street, returning in May 1815, by which time pressure had been brought to bear. A very senior director of the Company had been impressed into Claudius's cause, and instructions had been sent to Bombay that he should return at leisure to the Baghdad Residency, and the cuts in his increment be modified. Sir Evan Nepean had by that time effected his dismissal, but was compelled to reinstate him.

With improved health Rich's horror of returning to Baghdad was diminishing, and it was now really time to make arrangements for the journey. A route was planned through north Italy to the Adriatic and so by boat to Istanbul. As this allowed for a stay of several weeks in both Milan and Venice, no one could deny by the time he embarked that he had had an adequate share of European amenities. His six months in Paris had been largely spent in the distinguished company of people like Madame de Staël, driving his own pair of horses in the Bois in the afternoon, and in the evenings visiting the opera. He also saw the return of Napoleon from Elba. In Milan there was more music. For the first time he heard Paganini

## FOUNDATIONS IN THE DUST

play, and wrote in his journal a long, astonished commentary on his virtuosity. His final three weeks in Venice were the climax of his holiday. The familiar clichés used by his biographer to explain this ('the captivating romance of the Queen of the Adriatic': 'the Piazza palpitating with life': 'the beauty of the scene, with the wondrous succession of tints of an Italian sunset': 'the silvery light of the moon, accompanied by the song of the gondoliers') are really superfluous. Claudius had always loved Italy, and with Baghdad looming ahead, Venice seemed the apex of European culture. On 29 June he met the Duchess of Devonshire, who informed him of Napoleon's defeat at Waterloo. A week later he and Mary once more set out on their travels.

There was a minor consolation at Trieste, where before embarking they were joined by a young German called Bellino, whom they had met in Vienna. Rich had greatly liked him and, finding him a would-be orientalist, had engaged him as secretary at a salary of £80 per annum. This was the beginning of a long and very pleasant relationship, which ended only with Bellino's sad death of fever in 1820.

The journey by sea down the Adriatic, past Crete and through the Aegean was mostly familiar ground for Claudius. It is difficult to know why it should again have been necessary to wander so far afield as Istanbul and repeat the arduous journey across Anatolia, when disembarkation at one of the Levant ports would have brought them easily to Aleppo. Yet this was the route chosen and two months were spent in Istanbul itself. It was late November before they left, and the mountain passes must already have been covered with snow. The fact was that Claudius was still a little unsure of his relationship with the Company in Bombay and disinclined to reach Baghdad before his position was definitely regularized.

By the time he arrived in Mosul there was still no news, and he was kept uncomfortably hanging about there for over a month. Finally in March Hine arrived from Baghdad with the anxiously awaited dispatch, which told him that he was to return to Baghdad as Resident with his allowances not impossibly reduced. So the party embarked for the final stage of their journey on a large *kelek*, and on a spring evening a week later they saw the last rays of the

## RICH'S LAST YEARS

sun gilding the domes of Kadhimain, and drew in beneath the pillared balconies of Rusafah.

By the time Buckingham arrived in Baghdad the Riches had been back over four months and life at the Residency had resumed its normal course. His journey from Mosul had been a great deal less comfortable than theirs. From the outset, the noisy and conceited *tatar*, called Jonas, had been a great trial; lagging behind in Mosul when they set out in order to snatch a few last hours with one of the numerous wives he boasted of along the route, bad tempered and abusive when he caught up with them at the crossing of the Greater Zab. The way to Baghdad led by Erbil to Kirkuk and so onward through the Jebel Hamrîn. At Kifri, where a change of horses should have been found, only one was available, and Jonas stormed off into the town to look for more. Buckingham and the younger *tatar*, Ali, assuming that if his bullying was of no avail there was a long wait ahead, retired quietly to bed, but on awaking next morning an ominous silence in the *khân* led to the discovery that Jonas had in the night mounted the only horse and left for Baghdad without them.

Several days elapsed before they found a friendly merchant taking a small caravan to the capital and persuaded him to provide them with mounts. Even then Buckingham's troubles were not over. At Kara Tepe ('Tuppe'), where the party halted to rest in the courtyard of a mosque, he somehow succeeded in offending the merchant, and when they came to remount, found that his horse had been given to someone else, and that in its place was an already heavily-loaded mule. As there was no alternative, he perched himself uncomfortably on the summit of the load and the caravan proceeded. After halting at Delhi 'Abbas, a start was made again in the hottest part of the afternoon and Buckingham, who had been seated 'with a jug of water in one hand and a fan in the other', found himself subjected to the indignity of himself reloading the refractory mule without even anyone to hold the halter. Fortunately, as he says, 'a proud determination not to sink under it [the indignity], bore me through all my labour', and after a while he succeeded. He was now streaming with sweat, so before starting he stripped and saturated all his

## FOUNDATIONS IN THE DUST

clothes in cold water, including the skull-cap which he wore on his shaved head.

What happened next may perhaps be related at some length and in Buckingham's own words, since the amiable restraint of his style, contrasting as it does with the venom and irony of most modern travel-writers under similar provocation, is most characteristic of his whole generation. He says:

It was just as we had crossed one of the canals, and while suffering intensely from thirst, that I asked a Dervish, who was drinking from the hollow shell of a cocoa-nut at the stream, to give me a draught of water from his vessel; but this man, though devoted by his office to the exercise of hospitality and charitable offices to all mankind, and though he had but the moment before returned me the salutation of the faithful, added insolence to his refusal, and pricking my mule with a sharp instrument, caused the poor beast, already sinking under his double burden of a lading and a rider, to rear and kick, and ultimately to throw me off, with a part of the lading upon me. The agility of the Dervish, who was young and active, enabled him to escape the punishment which I should otherwise have inflicted upon him, for this breach of his own precepts to others; but as I was now dismounted, I began to reload the articles that had fallen off, after which, I repaired to the stream, to allay both my thirst and my anger at the same time. On endeavouring to remount, which was a task of no small difficulty, as the lading of the beast was wide and high, and there were neither stirrups, nor a stone, or the smallest eminence of any kind near us, the whole of the poor creatures burthen came tumbling on the ground. . . . To increase the evil, as I let go the hold of the halter, in order to use both hands in securing the packages, the mule made off at a full gallop, frisking and flinging its head in the air, pawing with its forelegs, and kicking with its hind ones, as if in derision at my dilemma, and triumph for its own happy riddance and escape. As the rest of the party had by this time got far a-head, I waited in this miserable plight for two full hours, by the wayside, literally guarding the merchandise with one eye, and keeping a look-out with the other on the movements of my truant mule, who regaled himself on the shrubs near; besides being in continual apprehension of having the whole property (which was not my own) taken possession of by robbers, who are never wanting to follow up the stragglers of a caravan, and plunder all they can lay their hands on. At length, some peasants of the country coming by, very charitably assisted me to catch my mule, and even helped me to reload it, when,

## RICH'S LAST YEARS

with their assistance, for it could not otherwise have been done, I remounted, and continued my way. . . .

Though I was now perfectly alone, and liable therefore to insult and pillage from any handful of men who might cross my path, I went on with a light heart at the prospect of my trouble soon to be at end, and had filled my pipe on the mule's back to smoke away my cares, and to make its enjoyment compensate for the want of a companion. As I abandoned the halter of the beast, by throwing it for a moment across his neck, while I struck a light, which requires the use of both hands, and while I was in the act of drawing my first whiff, the refractory brute, probably from imagining the pricking of the Dervish to be near him again, first cocked his ears forward, then stood fixed and immovable and at length, after three or four repeated flingings of his hindlegs in the air, again unseated me, and now, in the confusion of this totally unexpected result, the baggage and the animal itself came tumbling after and upon me, and nearly crushed me to death by their fall. I was a long while before I could extricate myself from this state, for even the beast was in some way tangled by its own girths and bandages, and could not rise from the ground. When I had with difficulty regained my legs, I found the burthen, from the firmness with which it was last braced on, to be all secure; and by my assistance, and a vigorous effort of its own, the mule rose again with all its lading fast as before. All my efforts to mount were, however, quite ineffectual; the packages, being large and comparatively light, making an elevation of three or four feet above the animal's back. My poor mule had had his share of disasters, as well as myself; and he seemed determined, by all the freaks and tricks in his power to perform, to show that he would not hazard any more. I was obliged therefore, bruised and tired and irritated as I was, to trudge the rest of my way on foot, holding the halter of my charge firmly in my hand, to prevent his escape, and much more disposed to give him the stripes of the Parisian ass-driver, as related by Sterne, than to feed him on the macaroons of the sentimental traveller.<sup>1</sup>

For Buckingham the journey's end was now almost in sight, but even so his troubles were not over. The minarets of Baghdad appeared on the horizon with the first light of dawn and it was still early morning when he arrived, dragging his mule, at one of the city gates—probably the *Bab al Wastâni*. Here he was stopped by Turkish customs officials, and having admitted that neither the mule

<sup>1</sup> Buckingham, Vol. II, p. 160 ff.

## FOUNDATIONS IN THE DUST

nor its load were his own, was not allowed to proceed until the owner appeared. While he was waiting humbly beside the gate, 'seated cross-legged on the dusty ground', an elaborately dressed cavalcade cantered past into the city amidst the respectful salutations of the crowd. This was the Pasha himself, returning from a morning ride, and at the end of the procession came two well-mounted individuals, whom he immediately realized from their speaking English to be Hine and Bellino. Feeling the humiliation of his position he refrained from making himself known.

But now his patience was exhausted. 'Being' he says, 'able to bear with it no longer, I drew my pistol from my girdle, and daring anyone at the peril of his life to molest me, I led off my mule in triumph, amid the execrations of the guards, for my insolence, but cheered by the shouts and applause of the rabble, for my defiance of a class on whom they look with the hatred of an oppressed race towards their tyrants.' Before presenting himself at the Residency, there was one more score to settle. When he appeared eventually at the Riches' breakfast-table, he brought with him the *tatar*, Jonas, for well-deserved chastisement.

It is not to be wondered at that, after so many tribulations, Buckingham found the Riches' establishment greatly to his taste. On Rich's own part, the arrival of any British guest at the Residency was something of an occasion, while one of Buckingham's calibre could be sure of the most cordial welcome. But for the moment the visitor's immediate requirements were obvious, and after a few words with his host he was conducted by a servant to the bath, where he no doubt effected a substantial *changement de décor*, discarding the Moghrabi merchant's paraphernalia and reappearing at last, save for the bizarre circumstance of his shaved head, in the guise of an English Esquire. As he says, after much enjoyment there (at the bath), he then 'returned to pass a day of unusual happiness in the intelligent and amiable society of Mr. and Mrs. Rich and the other members of their family'.

No praise could be high enough for the hospitality which he now enjoyed. 'The change from all that could be disagreeable, in the way of living, to so much comfort, and, indeed luxury, as I found

## RICH'S LAST YEARS

in the house of Mr. and Mrs. Rich, added to the still higher charm of the intelligent society with which I had become surrounded there, was sufficient to repay me for all the vexations I had suffered on my way.' He even confessed 'I continued to enjoy these pleasures uninterruptedly for several days, before I felt even a desire to gratify that curiosity which is so generally impatient on entering a large and celebrated city'.

In the weeks which followed he did in fact satisfy this curiosity with extreme thoroughness, and recorded the results of his investigations in a long and most detailed description of the city, which for many years continued to be accepted as an authoritative document. He also visited the more famous ancient sites accessible from the capital—'Aqar Qûf, the ruined *ziggurat* tower of the Kassite city Dûr Kurigalzu, which, like most early travellers, he took to be a mausoleum; Babylon and Birs Nimrod, whither he rode with Bellino, wearing Bedouin costume and posing as his dragoman, and later Ctesiphon. Actually his stay with the Riches was destined to continue a great deal longer than he had expected, for immediately on returning from his journey to Babylon he was taken with a fever, which developed into a severe illness. This was in August, and in spite of the attentions of Hine and Mary's careful nursing his recovery was retarded by a spell of appallingly hot weather (between 119 and 122 degrees for over a fortnight).<sup>1</sup>

Buckingham might obviously have chosen worse places to be ill in. He says himself 'the tedium of my confinement was considerably relieved by the number and variety of excellent books, which Mr. Rich's library contained, and which were accompanied also by the most unreserved communication from the gentleman himself of everything calculated to increase the interest of my journey eastward'. He goes on to mention Rich's extensive and valuable collection of antiquities, among which he noted 'cylinders, amulets, idols and intaglios of the most curious kind'. Yet in his mind the association of their character is usually with objects he has seen in Egypt, making one realize the complete unfamiliarity at the time of Mesopotamian art. He did not however exaggerate the value of the

<sup>1</sup> To-day, 5 July 1945, the newspaper reading in Baghdad is 115 degrees, as against a normal maximum of 106 degrees.

## FOUNDATIONS IN THE DUST

collection, for after Claudius's death it was bought from Mary by the British Museum for £7,000.<sup>1</sup>

Towards the end of August, Buckingham assured himself, by means of an experimental ride to Ctesiphon, that his health had almost sufficiently recovered to continue his journey to India. But, there being for the moment no news of a vessel leaving Basrah, he had a few days' grace in which to make some further observations of social life in Baghdad. During the early days of his stay he had experienced some difficulty in understanding the local brand of Arabic, which even to-day remains a fairly distinctive dialect. 'I had' he says, 'sufficient evidence myself of the Arabic being very bad, taking that of Cairo, of Mecca, and of the Yemen as standards of purity in pronunciation; for scarcely anything more harsh in sound, or more barbarous in construction, and the use of foreign words, can be conceived, than the dialect of Baghdad. Turkish, Persian, Koord and even Indian expressions, disfigure their sentences; and such Arabic words as are used are scarcely to be recognized on a first hearing, from the corrupted manner in which they are spoken.'<sup>2</sup> But since this circumstance perhaps enabled himself more easily to pass for an Egyptian Moslem, he afterwards enjoyed mixing in every kind of social and religious circle in the town.

Some final observations he was now able to make without leaving the house. The routine of the Residency interested him—Rich's morning *diwân*, 'which was regularly attended by all the officers of his own establishment, and by the heads of the chief departments of government in the city . . . everything was conducted with great decorum, and nothing could be more evident than the high degree of respect for the Resident with which these interviews inspired the visitors';<sup>3</sup> the long hours of refuge in the *sirdabs*, and his bed beneath a 'mosquito muslin' on the highest part of the housetop with 'nothing above us but the starry canopy of heaven'. From this point of vantage his unblushing curiosity enabled him to examine 'without being once perceived, or even suspected to be a witness . . . the early-morning habits of some neighbouring families'. He gives a quaint and most detailed description of a Moslem lady

<sup>1</sup> Alexander, p. 324.

<sup>2</sup> Buckingham, Vol. II, p. 490.

<sup>3</sup> *ibid.* p. 211.

## RICH'S LAST YEARS

humbly assisting with her husband's toilet, and turning finally to her own prayers only when she has him established comfortably on his cushions with his morning pipe. This brings him by devious ways to discussing the habit of tattooing, and the book ends on a now familiar note. 'There are artists in Baghdad, whose profession it is to decorate the forms of ladies with the newest patterns of wreaths, zones and girdles, for the bosom or the waist; and as this operation must occupy a considerable time, and many "sittings", as an English portrait-painter would express it, they must possess abundant opportunities of studying in perfection the beauties of the female form, in a manner not less satisfactory, perhaps, than that which is pursued in the Royal Academies of Sculpture and Painting in Europe.'

The Riches spent four more years in Baghdad, the first three of which were comparatively uneventful. Claudius devoted himself with increasing interest to the study of archaeology, and added rapidly to his collection of ancient manuscripts and coins. His memoir on the ruins of Babylon, published in 1815, had now run into a fourth edition, but his arguments had come in for some criticism from a certain Major Rennell, an orientalist and historical geographer. In 1817 he accordingly paid a second visit to Hillah with Bellino and carefully rechecked his theories and topography. His second set of memoirs, subsequently published (1818), virtually exhausted the possibilities of inference without excavation.

Later in the same year his work in the archaeological field was greatly stimulated by a six-weeks' visit from Sir Robert Ker Porter. Hilprecht<sup>1</sup> says of Porter:

From childhood loving and practising the arts, he had become a famous painter of international reputation, whose eminent talents, striking personality and final marriage with a Russian princess had secured for him a social standing which enabled him, by his pen and brush, to reach circles hitherto but little influenced by the books of ordinary travellers and the scientific and often dry investigations of men of the type of Otter, Niebuhr, Beauchamp and Rich. In his popularization of a subject which so far had stirred the minds of only a limited class of people, and in

<sup>1</sup> H. V. Hilprecht, *The Excavations in Assyria and Babylonia*, Philadelphia 1904, p. 44.

## FOUNDATIONS IN THE DUST

appealing, by his religious sentiment, the manner of his style, and the accurate representation of what he had observed, not less to men of science and religion than to the aristocratic circles of Europe, on whose interest and financial support the resurrection of Assyria and Babylonia chiefly depended, lies the significance of Ker Porter as a Babylonian explorer.

He had been spending some months in Persia, visiting and recording ancient monuments, and the ponderous volume in which he describes the journey<sup>1</sup> is decorated with the most spirited and excellent engravings made from his sketches, including those of the famous 'boar-hunt' and 'stag-hunt' at Tak-i-Bustân. Travelling down to Baghdad from Kermanshah, he found himself held up at Kizil Robat by two of his party becoming seriously ill with fever and himself, owing to a miscalculation, embarrassed for ready money. A courier was sent ahead to the Residency, and in a commendably short time returned with an impressive personage, who, introducing himself as Rich's *cawass*, delivered to Sir Robert a purse containing several thousand piastres. It is a remarkable reflexion on Rich's reputation that, after the courier had left, the proprietor of the *khân* in which Porter was staying, having learnt the purpose of the courier's errand, at once himself offered the loan of a very large sum of money, requiring only a verbal assurance that it should be repaid to a friend in Baghdad.

Like Buckingham during his stay in Baghdad, Porter in Bellino's company visited four of the most accessible Babylonian sites; Babylon, Birs Nimrod (where he saw 'three majestic lions taking the air upon the heights of the pyramid'), Al 'Oheimir (the ruins of Kish), and 'Aqar Qûf. Of the last named he has not only left four admirable sketch-elevations, which constitute the most useful record for gauging the continued denudation of the ruin, but he arrived nearer than any previous visitor to the correct explanation of the building's original purpose.<sup>2</sup> 'I should suppose' he says, 'the mass we now see to be no more than the base of some loftier super-

<sup>1</sup> Sir R. Ker Porter, *Travels in Georgia, Persia, Armenia, Ancient Babylonia etc.*, London 1822, 2 vols.

<sup>2</sup> See reports on the Iraq Government's excavations at 'Aqar Qûf, published as supplements to *Iraq* in 1944-6.

## RICH'S LAST YEARS

structure, probably designed for the double use of a temple and an observatory; a style of sacred edifice common with the Chaldeans, and likely to form the principal object in every city and town devoted to the idolatry of Belus and the worship of the stars.'

Ker Porter, like everyone else, was charmed with Rich's company and hospitality, to which he afterwards paid a notable tribute, holding him up as a model for all British representatives in remote countries. Of his reception he wrote: 'Personally I was a stranger to Mr. Rich; yet the most eloquent language cannot describe the friendly warmth with which both himself and his accomplished wife bade me welcome; nor can I express, in any words, my sense of their subsequent kindness.'<sup>1</sup>

Early in 1820 Rich made a short trip with Bellino to Qasr-i-Shirîn and what he saw of the fringes of the Kurdish country greatly aroused his interest in the Kurds. Having in any case intended to spend the hot summer months of that year away from Baghdad, he now began to plan a more elaborate official visit to Sulaimaniyah and Kurdistan, and by the end of April was ready to leave. His writings on the subject of this journey are all embodied in the two volumes called *Narrative of a Residence in Koordistan*, which Mary edited after his death and published in London in 1836. For him the expedition was an immense success, particularly since he encountered in almost all the Kurds with whom he came into contact congenial and sympathetic qualities in such marked contrast to his Turkish associates in Baghdad. On leaving Sulaimaniyah the whole of his feelings were summed up in one strangely melancholy conclusion:

I quit Koordistan with unfeigned regret. I, most unexpectedly, found in it the best people that I have ever met in the East. I have formed friendships, and been uniformly treated with a degree of sincerity, kindness and unbounded hospitality, which I fear I must not again look for in the course of my weary pilgrimage; and the remembrance of which will last as long as life itself endures.<sup>2</sup>

Rich's journals are of course packed with information—the results of his diligent and conscientious inquiries on all subjects.

<sup>1</sup> Ker Porter, Vol. II, p. 245.

<sup>2</sup> Rich, *Narrative*, Vol. I, p. 326.

## FOUNDATIONS IN THE DUST

Bearings were taken at all times, the temperature and weather recorded and even small excavations made when interesting ancient sites were discovered. But to-day the country he visited is mapped and familiar, the roads he travelled are surfaced for motor traffic and the young *aghās* are western-educated. So it is in no way surprising that his writings and notes have become a subject only of curiosity and admiration. For a human picture of the cavalcade which set out from Baghdad in the spring of 1820 in pouring rain on a journey to Kurdistan, and of its arrival and reception at Sulaimaniyah, one must turn to an appendix, included no doubt with considerable diffidence by Mary, and consisting of a fragment of her own journal. Here is a sample:

*April 16.* Mr. Rich was already gone on to the garden of Hajee Abdullah Bey, about three miles from Bagdad, where he had been invited to pass the last night; and from thence our journey fairly begins. The night was very stormy and rainy. All of us were much astonished about ten at night to see Hajee Abdullah Bey's wife walk in. She had mounted her horse, and, in the midst of all the bad weather, had come three miles in the dark purposely to pass the last evening with me.

*April 17.* After getting a couple of hours' sleep, I rose by daylight, and, with unfeigned sorrow on both parts, took leave of my kind friends . . . we proceeded on to the Bey's garden, surrounded by my attendants on horseback. We were not, however, allowed to pass the house of our friends without dismounting and taking some refreshment. As Mr. Rich was just mounting when we arrived, and as eastern etiquette makes it indecorous for a man to appear to care anything more about his wife than the *rest of his baggage*, or to allow her to form part of his more stately procession, I the more readily accepted the invitation, and had the advantage of eating a very good breakfast ere I commenced my journey, and in the mean time Mr. Rich and his party got well on their road. . . .

Mary then gives some details of her actual method of travel, and that of her companions, Taqui, the Armenian lady's maid, and the obscure character called 'Minas's Mother', whose terror at every new development of the journey was a continual source of amusement.

I travel in a *takhterawân*, or litter, to give an idea of which I merely add, that it very much resembles a palanquin swung between two shafts

## RICH'S LAST YEARS

before and two behind, to which are harnessed two mules. Over it is a covering of scarlet cloth, and it is ornamented at the four corners with gilt balls. My female attendants were in mohaffas, or a kind of cage, two of which are swung on one mule, and balance each other; but as Minas's mother is very stout and poor Taqui very slender, it was a difficult and nice operation to make the balance equal by throwing in a quantity of stones on Taqui's side. It is by no means a comfortable conveyance owing to the constrained posture the person is obliged to sit in. . . .

The early part of the journey northwards over the flat country beside the Diyalah was made more than normally dreary by the weather. Eight days of almost continuous rain so late in the spring was most unusual and completely immobilized the little caravan.

The whole country was in such a state, and our tents and baggage so heavy and unmanageable from the wet, that we were obliged to remain stationary. . . . To add to our luxuries, the ground on which we were encamped was full of scorpions; and let it be remembered, the ground is our only seat. Everbody seemed out of humour at this succession of stormy weather, it being so very unusual in this climate. . . . I sat up most of the night in considerable alarm and at length lay down without undressing.

And on the following day:

Our situation is really very melancholy. The whole country, as far as the eye can reach, is one sheet of water, and there is no village to which we can retreat within three hours of our camp; besides which, there is a scarcity of provisions; our people are exposed to all the fury of the storm; and we ourselves are not much better off. We can neither go backwards nor forwards, and here we must remain. . . .

Under these conditions, which lasted almost as far as Kirkuk, it is not surprising that Mary has to record:

I was too unwell to admit either of our continuing our journey to-day, or of my accompanying the gentlemen on another *ruin-hunting* expedition. . . .

and a little later:

Claude very poorly from a violent bilious attack, and obliged to keep quiet . . . Mr. Rich had a pretty tranquil night. . . .

## FOUNDATIONS IN THE DUST

Furthermore she was bitterly disappointed that they were compelled to leave the main road before encountering the *tatars*, whom they knew to be approaching with their mail from home. She complains:

Thus am I obliged, I own with a very ill grace, to wait many days ere I shall see the beloved Mardocks post-mark; and in what a place shall I receive the letters written by the most amiable, accomplished and beloved inhabitants of that pleasant retirement in the most refined and happiest country in the world! Oh that I could convey to you an idea of the barbarous, burning land we are in! Love your dear England!

But now they were out of the plain and travelling through low hills, with growing corn, pebbly brooks in the valleys and snow-mountains in the distance. Their spirits rose accordingly. At a point a little beyond Kirkuk, Mary writes:

A tent for us was pitched on a little elevation above my favourite river, which winding and meandering over its pebbly bed, through little *bosquets* of fig-trees, mulberry trees and rose-bushes, together with the gentle green swelling bank on the opposite side, the extremely fresh appearance of everything around us, altogether made me very *pathetic*, as Claude called it, while he tried, though very unsuccessfully, to conceal how very, very much he sympathised with me. But from our very long privation of such a prospect it appeared like enchantment, and affected us more than the many celebrated spots we had visited in either England, Switzerland, or Italy. We rambled about the valley and through the beautiful grove, gathering roses and wild-flowers, till suddenly we came to a *wild rose bush*, for which everything else was abandoned and we almost worshipped the solitary exile, as it seemed, from England. . . .

The party's last camping-place was in a very beautiful garden outside and above the town of Sulaimaniyah. The place was full of the smell of roses and the song of nightingales, and Mary was extremely loath to leave it for less congenial quarters in the town itself. However the time was soon fixed for their official reception by the Pasha of Sulaimaniyah. Mary, of course, travelled with the scarlet curtains of her *takhterawân* lowered, and was only made aware at all of having entered the town by 'the low, continued sound of voices'.

Rich's travels in Kurdistan were not restricted to the Sulaimaniyah

## RICH'S LAST YEARS

area. He penetrated far into what are now the Kurdish provinces of Irân, crossing the Zagros range and even reaching Sinna, where he was the guest of the Vali. Accompanying him now were Bellino and a Mr. Bell, who had succeeded Hine as surgeon to the Residency. When he returned to Sulaimaniyah, Bellino left the party to pay an antiquarian visit to Kermanshah and Hamadân. It was during this trip that he was taken with a serious fever, and though he recovered sufficiently to rejoin Rich in Mosul,<sup>1</sup> it was there that his sad death occurred the following November. Claudius remained some months in Mosul before returning to Baghdad. This time he took the opportunity of carefully surveying the ruins of Nineveh, and so paved the way for the sensational discoveries which were made there twenty years later. In search of early manuscripts, he visited all the Christian monasteries in the hills north of Mosul. Amongst these was Rabban Hormuzd, of whose chapel Gertrude Bell writes: 'For English eyes it has an interest out of all proportion to its age, for upon the doorway are carved the names of James and Mary Rich, with the date 1820. . . .'<sup>2</sup> Like other famous travellers from Herodotus to Byron, the Riches seemed fond of carving their names in remote places. They did so over the little sacred spring in the east wall at Nineveh which they had christened 'Thisbe's Well', and Claudius remarked:

Some traveller in after times . . . may wonder, on reading the name of Mary Rich, who the adventurous female was who had visited the ruins of Nineveh. . . . He will not be aware that, had her name been inscribed at every spot she had visited in the course of her weary pilgrimage, it would be found in places compared with which Mosul is the centre of civilisation.<sup>3</sup>

In February 1821 Rich returned by *kelek* to Baghdad to find Da'ûd Pasha, who had succeeded Sa'id, completely out of hand. He had been imposing increasing disabilities on British merchants trading through the port of Basrah, and repudiated all European rights in Baghdad. To Rich, on his return, he was rude and disrespectful,

<sup>1</sup> Budge (*Rise and Progress of Assyriology*, p. 32) says Bellino died in Hamadân.

<sup>2</sup> Bell, *Amurath to Amurath*, p. 282.

<sup>3</sup> Rich, *Narrative*, Vol. II, p. 51.

## FOUNDATIONS IN THE DUST

and, when driven to ask for his passports, he refused him permission to leave the city. On returning to the Residency, Rich learnt through private sources that Da'ûd was preparing to send troops and take him prisoner, so there was no alternative to putting the house in a state of siege. The sepoy guards were well armed and there were at the time several Indian Army officers staying as guests, so its defence presented no particular difficulty. Rich also had confidence in the fact that the townspeople were his friends almost to a man, and were only waiting for a shot to be fired in order to raise a general insurrection. The Pasha began his demonstration by picketing all the city gates and placing a gun to cover the Residency from the opposite bank of the Tigris. His regular infantry then advanced directly upon the house, but as soon as they saw Rich's defence preparations, they 'fell back and took up their station at a coffee house nearby'.<sup>1</sup> Their commandant was under an obligation to Rich, who had saved his life on a previous occasion, and now came forward to suggest negotiations, with the result that a little later two of the Pasha's ministers arrived at the Residency for a parley. Rich, of course, refused to take part in any kind of discussion until the troops were removed, and when Da'ûd's envoys hesitated to comply, he completely lost his temper, and, seizing a stick, drove them ignominiously from the house.

This was the end of the siege, and Da'ûd, who was growing progressively more uneasy about the whole incident and most anxious to be rid of Rich, was soon afterwards prevailed upon to provide passports. The yacht, which had been moored alongside the Residency terrace, was manned and loaded, and after a tumultuous and affectionate farewell from the population of Baghdad, having provided for the future of their dependants, the Rich family set sail for Basrah. There they found an English vessel leaving for Bushire, and on 13 June 1821, with few regrets, they quitted the Pashalik of Baghdad for the last time.

Arrived at Bushire, where the Company maintained a factory, Rich received compliments and praise both from Bombay and Istanbul on his firm action in Baghdad. The time had now plainly come for a change of post, and he had in fact already been offered

<sup>1</sup> Alexander, p. 298.

## RICH'S LAST YEARS

an important appointment in Bombay by the new Governor, Mountstuart Elphinstone. It was now merely a matter of awaiting direct instructions to proceed. There was no point in Mary's remaining in the appalling sticky heat of Bushire, so he decided reluctantly that she should precede him to Bombay, travelling on the *Volunteer* which had brought them from Basrah. As the shabby buildings of Bushire began to dissolve in the heat-haze, Mary had her last glimpse of Claudius waving goodbye from the little jetty.

If Rich's conscience had permitted him to accompany his wife directly to Bombay, the tragedy which followed would have been avoided. As it was, his restless temperament soon tired of waiting at Bushire and he determined on a tour to Shiraz, for the purpose of visiting Persepolis, the Tomb of Cyrus and various other ancient sites. What followed is described in an anonymous notice which serves as a preface to the narrative:

While at Shiraz, the cholera morbus appeared in the city, and with such violence that it diffused universal dismay, six thousand inhabitants out of a population of forty thousand being carried off in a few days. The prince with all his family, all the chief nobles, and the higher classes, and such of the lower as were able, deserted the town. Mr. Rich refused to quit the place, and continued nobly to exert himself to quiet the alarm of the inhabitants, and to assist the sick and dying. His time for many days was chiefly employed in visiting them, and administering the necessary medicines. The tribute of gratitude and respect which he received from the multitudes whom he assisted was gratifying to his heart. But the disease was already working in his own veins. On leaving the bath on 4th of October, symptoms of cholera appeared, and, in spite of every assistance and care, he expired on the following morning, the 5th of October. He was interred in Jehan Numa, one of the royal gardens in which he lived at the time, where a monument has since been erected to his memory.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> *Narrative*, Vol. I, p. xxx. The explorer, Baillie-Fraser and an old friend of Rich's, Dr. Dukes, as well as Dr. Tod, with whom he had been travelling, were all present at the funeral. Six years later a relative called Macdonald Kinneir had the remains disinterred and re-buried in the Armenian Cathedral at Isfahan.



## BOOK II

### *Chapter Six*

#### BIRTH OF ASSYRIOLOGY

WHEN Rich's collection of antiquities reached the British Museum in 1825, attention was for the time being naturally focussed on the coins and Syriac manuscripts, since from the cuneiform inscriptions no scrap of information could at that time be obtained. In point of fact, the whole collection on arrival was split up into groups according to the various categories within which the objects fell, and no complete list has survived of what it comprised.<sup>1</sup> According to Budge's account, however, the cuneiform material accounted for one of the seven thousand pounds which Mary Rich received from the trustees and was by no means negligible in quantity. He mentions<sup>2</sup> 'four historical baked clay cylinders, inscribed in cuneiform, thirty-two clay tablets and fragments inscribed in cuneiform, thirteen bricks stamped with inscriptions in the Babylonian character, a black stone memorial tablet inscribed in cuneiform, a large inscribed boundary stone, and several small miscellaneous objects'. Apart from a few inscribed bricks sent back to Europe by Pietro della Valle and Beauchamp and others, collected for the East India Company, these for the time being represented all the portable examples of Babylonian inscriptions in the world. Yet by 1825 the first faltering steps had already been taken towards the decipherment of the wedge-writing, not on the basis of anything found in Iraq, but of the great, almost ineffaceable records of the Persian kings carved on rock among the Persian mountains.

Rich, on his last, fatal journey to Shiraz, like many previous European travellers, had seen and endeavoured to copy some of these inscriptions, particularly those in the vicinity of Persepolis—Takht-i-Jamshīd, Murghāb (the Tomb of Cyrus) and Naqsh-i-

<sup>1</sup> C. J. Gadd, *Stones of Assyria*, London 1936, p. 12.

<sup>2</sup> E. A. W. Budge, *Rise and Progress of Assyriology*, London 1925, p. 26.

## FOUNDATIONS IN THE DUST

Rajah. But the even more important inscription on the great rock at Behistun, twenty miles from Kermanshah, he had only heard of from Bellino who had visited it shortly before his death. Almost all the other inscriptions had been copied with greater or lesser accuracy by Karsten Niebuhr late in the previous century. Like the Behistun inscription, they were trilingual; that is, the same cuneiform text was repeated in three different languages, which we now know to be Old Persian, Elamite and Babylonian. In Egypt, some years before, Napoleon's soldiers had discovered the famous Rosetta Stone with its parallel inscriptions in Greek and Egyptian hieroglyphs, which served as a clue for the decipherment of the Pharaonic pictographs. Now these trilingual inscriptions in Persia were to fulfil something of the same function in deciphering cuneiform.

As early as 1802, working mainly on Niebuhr's copyings, a young German college-lecturer, called Grotefend, succeeded first of all in establishing that, on the basis of the smaller number of signs used, one of the three languages was probably alphabetical rather than syllabic. He therefore selected this version for further study. Grotefend recollected that in the later Pehlevi inscriptions the Persian kings were usually given the title 'Great King, King of Kings', so taking two short alphabetical cuneiform texts copied by Niebuhr from above the heads of royal figures carved in relief, he proceeded to do a lot of logical thinking. In each case the groups of signs at the beginning and end of the text were different, so he took each text to refer to a different king. But in the middle of each text the same group occurred twice and then a third time with certain additions. He at once realized that these additions could be taken to signify the genitive case, and that if the repeating group spelt the word 'king', here was the familiar formula of the Pehlevi. Next he noticed that the final group of each text also ended with genitive signs. So why should each not read: 'So-and-So, the Great King, King of Kings, son of So-and-So.' This, as it proved, fitted perfectly, and by a little judicious guessing he was even able to identify the two kings as 'Darius, son of Hystaspes' and 'Xerxes, son of Darius'.

Progressing ingeniously from the known to the unknown, Grotefend eventually succeeded in reconstructing a complete alphabet and

## BIRTH OF ASSYRIOLOGY

in attributing the correct phonetic value to twelve of its letters. Yet, on account of the academic snobbery of contemporary German scientists, his discovery was refused publication by the Göttingen Academy and was not actually vindicated until ninety years later. Meanwhile others, working independently, had arrived at much the same results. Foremost among these was Henry Creswicke Rawlinson whom we have last seen leaving India for Persia as part of a military mission to the court of the Shah.

Lieutenant Rawlinson's little detachment arrived at Bushire by ship in the autumn of 1833, but were unable to cross the mountain passes to Teheran until the following spring. He was then able to make a preliminary examination of the Persepolis inscriptions on the way and was immensely intrigued by their possibilities. In March 1835 he found himself posted to Kermanshah in the capacity of military adviser to the Shah's brother, the governor of Kurdistan, and therefore within easy reach of the Rock of Behistun.

Actually the rock lies twenty-two miles to the east of Kermanshah, but it is only necessary to recollect Rawlinson's equestrian exploits as a subaltern in India<sup>1</sup> in order to realize how inconsiderable such a distance would seem. Budge,<sup>2</sup> in fact, mentions that 'on one occasion, when it was necessary to warn the British Ambassador at Teheran of the arrival of the Russian agent at Herât, Rawlinson rode 750 miles in 150 consecutive hours'.<sup>3</sup> In any case, he at once began a series of regular visits to the rock, and between 1835 and 1837 set himself the task of making exact copies of the inscriptions. The process required every bit of skill which he possessed as an expert climber and involved the continual and repeated risk of his life.

Let us now examine a much more recent visitor's account of the rock itself. Mr. Filmer, in a travel book published in 1937,<sup>4</sup> says: 'To obtain a sight of the great inscription and the sculpture surmounting it I had to descend from my automobile opposite a Persian tea house at the point of the rock by the road and then clamber over the strewn boulders at the foot of the mountain as far as it was

<sup>1</sup> See p. 8.

<sup>2</sup> Budge, p. 33.

<sup>3</sup> This is probably the topically amusing episode described by his brother, George Rawlinson, *Memoir*, p. 67.

<sup>4</sup> *Pageant of Persia*, London 1937.

## FOUNDATIONS IN THE DUST

possible conveniently to climb. From a corner of the rock thus gained, a view, although still somewhat indistinct, may be had of the smooth-faced ledges [*sic*] bearing in three languages a record of Darius' rule.' The sculptured panel, which is actually about 400 feet from the ground, represents Darius himself, standing in judgement upon nine rebel chiefs, including, at the end of the row, a strange-looking individual called 'Skunka' wearing a sort of dunce's cap. Also, the king is treading underfoot a figure representing the usurper, Smerdis, while the group is completed by two attendants, standing behind, and the god Ahuramazda in his winged disk.

The early visitors to the rock could by no means be expected to know all this, and, owing partly to the preference of Western travellers for Biblical associations, their conclusions were often sufficiently remarkable. Ker Porter, for instance, who examined the sculptures through a telescope, identified the minor figures as 'representatives of the Ten Tribes' standing before a 'King of Assyria and of the Medes', and surmised that Skunka's dunce-cap was probably 'the mitre worn by the sacerdotal tribe of Levi'.

During the process of copying, Rawlinson naturally made a minute examination of the rock-face. He consequently made certain discoveries which are not generally known. In the first place the whole prepared area—about twelve hundred square feet of it—had been carefully smoothed and the unsound portions of the stone replaced with better material embedded in lead. After this the whole face had received a high polish, 'which could only have been accomplished by mechanical means'. After the sculpture and inscriptions had been carved, it had been given a thick coat of hard, siliceous varnish to protect it. The varnish was plainly harder than the actual stone, for in certain places where moisture had broken out from the face of the rock it had pushed away great flakes of the varnish, which Rawlinson found fallen on the ledge beneath, sometimes still bearing the clear impression of the lettering which they had covered.<sup>1</sup>

During his early visits to the rock in 1835, Rawlinson began his copying of the Persian and Elamite inscriptions without the help of ladders or ropes, simply climbing down to the ledge beneath the

<sup>1</sup> G. Rawlinson, *Memoir*, p. 146.

## BIRTH OF ASSYRIOLOGY

panel. But the intentionally inaccessible location chosen by Darius for the sculptures made the area to be reached in this way very small, and during his return visits, in later years, ropes and ladders had to be used to read the remoter panels. Even so, the Babylonian inscription remained inaccessible until 1847, when a chance circumstance enabled Rawlinson to obtain 'squeezes'. He says:

At length, however, a wild Kurdish boy, who had come from a distance, volunteered to make the attempt, and I promised him a considerable award if he succeeded. The mass of rock in question is scarped, . . . so that it cannot be approached by any of the ordinary means of climbing. The boy's first move was to squeeze himself up a cleft in the rock a short distance to the left of the projecting mass. When he had ascended some distance above it, he drove a wooden peg firmly into the cleft, fastened a rope to this, and then endeavoured to swing himself across to another cleft at some distance on the other side; but in this he failed owing to the projection of the rock. It then only remained for him to cross over the cleft by hanging on by his toes and fingers to the slight inequalities on the bare face of the precipice, and in this he succeeded, passing over a distance of twenty feet of almost smooth perpendicular rock in a manner which to a looker-on appeared quite miraculous. When he reached the second cleft, the real difficulties were over. He had brought a rope with him attached to the first peg, and now, driving in a second, he was able to swing himself right over the projecting mass of rock. Here with a short ladder he formed a swinging seat, like a painter's cradle, and, fixed upon this seat, he took under my direction the paper cast of the Babylonian translation of the records of Darius.<sup>1</sup>

Fifty years later, after much exhibition, these same 'squeezes' were partly eaten by mice in the British Museum,<sup>2</sup> but they had by then fulfilled their function and the record had been fully deciphered.

Rawlinson's first clue to the decipherment of the Persian version, though he was probably unaware of it, was almost the same phrases as had so much helped Grotefend over thirty years earlier—'Darius, the King, son of Hystaspes', and 'Xerxes, the King, son of Darius'. The identification of these phrases gave him enough phonetic values to identify many of the other proper names mentioned in the

<sup>1</sup> Budge, *Rise and Progress of Assyriology*, p. 35.

<sup>2</sup> *ibid.* p. 36.

## FOUNDATIONS IN THE DUST

inscription, and by comparing them with possible Greek equivalents to compose an alphabet. By the end of 1837 he had succeeded in making a translation of the entire first two paragraphs of the inscription, which he sent in the form of a paper to the Royal Asiatic Society. It was on this paper and on a subsequent one written in 1839 that Rawlinson's claim to be the 'Father of Cuneiform' rests.

Yet much still remained to be done. There were still the syllabic Elamite and Babylonian languages to tackle, and these offered immensely more formidable problems. Rawlinson, as an active Army officer, lacked more than anything the leisure in which to apply himself to the task. He returned to India in 1839, just in time to take part in the Afghan War. In 1840, with the rank of major, he became Political Agent in Western Afghanistan, and later led a body of Persian cavalry with conspicuous success at the battle of Kandahar. With his return to India in 1842 his military career ended. During his early years in Persia he had once visited Baghdad for a month and it was thither he was now bent on returning to continue his cuneiform studies. Fortunately at about this time Colonel Taylor, Rich's successor as British Political Agent in Turkish Arabia, was due to retire, and Rawlinson had the great satisfaction of being offered the Baghdad Residency by Lord Ellenborough. On 6 December 1843 he landed in Baghdad from a British steamer under a salute of thirteen guns.

Since this brings the thread of Assyriological research back to Mesopotamia, a short retrospect is necessary over the period of more than twenty years since Rich's death at Shiraz. We last saw Da'ûd Pasha of Baghdad in disgrace with the Sublime Porte for his outrageous treatment of Rich. He indeed welcomed Rich's successor, Colonel Taylor, with well-simulated contrition. But the anachronism of his Mamluk rule and contempt for the Sultan's authority could not last for ever, and the crisis came in 1830, when, at the close of the war with Russia, the Sultan realized that the Pashalik of Baghdad had supplied no help whatever either in revenue or in kind. An envoy was dispatched to Baghdad with instructions to announce the deposition of Da'ûd and the approaching appointment of a non-

## BIRTH OF ASSYRIOLOGY

Mamluk governor in his place. He was met half-way between Kirkuk and Baghdad by an elaborately ceremonial deputation accompanied by a horse-drawn carriage, an almost unheard-of amenity in Baghdad at that time, and perhaps the ancestor of the ubiquitous *arabâna* of more modern days. On arrival in Baghdad the envoy withdrew with ominous dignity to the apartments prepared for him, and there, a few days later, by the Pasha's orders, he was quietly strangled.

When the Porte was informed of the death of its envoy (which, as a matter of form, was attributed to cholera), it was clear that a reconquest of the Iraq province would be necessary. Accordingly, an individual called 'Ali Ridha was appointed in Da'ûd's place, and, for his convenience, to the Pashalik of Baghdad was added that of Aleppo, so that he might reside in and administer the one, while making adequate preparations for the subjugation of the other. Da'ûd, now officially branded as a rebel and an outlaw, must have realized that he had gone too far, for he sufficiently demeaned himself to ask the advice of Colonel Taylor as to his next move. The Resident, however, was saved the embarrassment of a reply by an entirely extraneous circumstance. Late in March 1831 the plague descended upon Baghdad.

The story of the appalling and complicated disaster which now befell the city is reasonably well known. In its way it is comparable with the fall of Nineveh or the destruction of Pompeii, and is made the more remarkable by the fact that, unlike either, Baghdad did subsequently survive as an inhabited city. Indeed, the significance of the whole episode lies in the fact that, having occurred little more than a century ago, it is a circumstance without some knowledge of which one cannot fairly assess the modern character of Baghdad.

Baillie-Fraser,<sup>1</sup> another well-known traveller who visited Colonel Taylor at the Residency only three years afterwards, was astonished to find how little remained of the Baghdad depicted by Buckingham's now famous account of the city before the plague, which he quotes in full. In order to explain the contrast presented by the almost incredible poverty and squalor of the city as he found it, he

<sup>1</sup> J. Baillie-Fraser, *Travels in Koordistan, Mesopotamia, etc.*, 2 vols., London 1840.

## FOUNDATIONS IN THE DUST

adds a long and detailed account of the two tragic months in 1831 during which a hundred thousand people are said to have perished in the streets of Rusafah alone. The most moving passages in this are derived from the surviving journal of an English missionary called Groves who remained in Baghdad throughout, and by some providence contrived to survive.

Arriving with his wife and child in Baghdad in 1830, Groves had set up a modest establishment where, in the face of every kind of obstruction from Moslem bigotry, he had succeeded in starting a school for a score or so of Armenian children. A first fragment of his journal, describing his journey out through Russia and Persia and his first difficult months in Baghdad, was published in London in 1831, obviously before the story of his subsequent adventures had become known.<sup>1</sup> In turning its pages one is struck by his voluntary self-dedication to a task whose impracticability is as evident as its usefulness is doubtful. At the same time one cannot fail to notice that his conventional piety is most gratifyingly tempered with common sense. This is perhaps best illustrated by a single entry on an occasion when he had just been informed that a *tatar* bringing mail from Istanbul has been attacked near Sinjar and robbed of all his letters. Groves says:<sup>2</sup>

This created a momentary disappointment, but quickly we remembered it was of the Lord and therefore for our good.

He then adds:

and perhaps the tartar may have had no letters for us.

The sequence of events which Groves had to record in his diary during the spring months of 1831 may be briefly outlined as follows:

31 *March*. Colonel Taylor shut up the Residency and from then onwards nothing was received through the postern unless first passed through water.

10 *April*. Deaths in the city were now estimated at seven thousand. Of several large bands of people who had attempted to leave and go elsewhere, some were murdered and robbed by Bedouin, others were held up by floods, while the remainder carried the plague

<sup>1</sup> *Journal of Mr. Anthony N. Groves, Missionary*, London 1831.

<sup>2</sup> *ibid.* p. 198.

## BIRTH OF ASSYRIOLOGY

with them and died on the road. In spite of precautions in the Residency, a sepoy died and several other servants were infected.

12 *April*. Owing to prolonged rain the Tigris began to rise rapidly. It had already broken through its bunds to the northwards and flooded the low country around the city. It now began to reach danger-point in Baghdad itself with no one to attend to the embankments. Colonel Taylor decided to leave for Basrah. Invited to accompany him, Mr. Groves insisted upon remaining to give what help he could to his pupils and their families. The Residency party left in their own boats, now conveniently moored to the balcony of the house.

13 *April*. Groves' neighbours all died. He reports fifty bodies in the street within a space of six hundred yards. The number of deaths per day rose from fifteen hundred to eighteen hundred.

20 *April*. Part of the city wall fell and the flood burst into the city, inundating the whole of the eastern and northern districts. Houses began to fall, as their foundations were undermined, and fifteen hundred people were either drowned or crushed beneath the ruins within a few hours.

24 *April*. Groves visited the Residency, a part of which had fallen into the river. Out of the eighteen staff which Taylor had left to guard the house only one individual survived, mourning a family of fourteen.

25 *April*. The daily death-rate reached its maximum of five thousand persons. (The population of Baghdad before the plague was less than a hundred and fifty thousand.)<sup>1</sup>

4 *May*. The weather began to grow hot and the plague to decrease. The water in the town subsided, leaving a vast ruin-field covered in a deep layer of brown Mesopotamian mud, from which starving dogs began to exhume corpses.

7 *May*. Just as conditions in the town were improving, the plague entered Groves' house, and within a few days Mrs. Groves and their child both succumbed. He himself afterwards removed to India, where he continued his missionary work for many years. The remainder of his journals were published posthumously.

In Baghdad a few thousand inhabitants remained crowded into

<sup>1</sup> R. Coke, *Baghdad City of Peace*, London 1927, p. 259.

## FOUNDATIONS IN THE DUST

the small section of the town where the houses stood high enough to have been clear of the flood. Other fugitives soon began to trickle back within the city from the surrounding country, but the ruined crops and flooded vegetable gardens now deprived them of their normal source of food, and famine added to the general distress. Da'ūd Pasha himself, having failed in an early attempt to leave the city, had been stricken with the plague but miraculously recovered, and now emerged from the ruins of the Sarai where he had been attended by a single surviving retainer. On the arrival of 'Ali Ridha with a punitive force from the north, he gave himself up, and, partly no doubt in consideration of all he had gone through, was sent to Istanbul with a strong and, as it proved, effective recommendation to mercy. 'Ali Ridha then assumed legitimate control of the Pashalik, which he retained until 1842.

During these twenty years between Rich's death and Rawlinson's arrival in Baghdad, the course of archaeological exploration in Mesopotamia was rapidly approaching an important turning point. Up till now it had depended almost exclusively on the personal initiative of private individuals and such private funds as happened to be at their disposal. The time had now arrived for public institutions to take a hand and for public funds to make actual excavations possible. Meanwhile final contributions to the cause of surface exploration had been made by two individuals, one of whom has not yet been mentioned. This was a certain Captain Robert Mignan who, during Colonel Taylor's time, commanded the Residency escort. Almost every traveller till now had restricted his investigations of Babylonia to the sites directly accessible from the Euphrates route between Baghdad and Basrah. Between 1826 and 1828 Robert Mignan set out to cover some of the large areas of country in south Iraq which his predecessors had left unexplored. Where their activities had been hampered by retinues of formal attendants and military escorts, Mignan travelled light, 'accompanied only by six Arabs, completely armed and equipped after the fashion of the country, and by a small boat, tracked by eight sturdy natives, in order to facilitate his researches on either bank of the stream'.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Hilprecht, *The Excavations in Assyria and Babylonia*.

## BIRTH OF ASSYRIOLOGY

Mignan's invaluable work was carried a stage further seven years later by Baillie-Fraser who adopted the same light method of travelling. In a journey of only one month, at the end of 1834, he was the first to venture across the *terra incognita* between the two rivers, and in the process discovered and recorded the names of mounds which we now know to be the remains of some of the most famous Sumerian cities, such as Tell Jokha, the ruins of Umma and Senkara, which is ancient Larsa.<sup>1</sup> He was also probably the first visitor to the ruins of Ur.

The next enterprise in order of time, and one which already heralded the beginning of state-subsidized exploration, was of an entirely different character. This was the famous Euphrates Expedition, which has been brought to mind in recent months by the discovery in Basrah of a commemorative tablet, evidently part of some sort of monument.<sup>2</sup> The inscription reads:

This Fountain commemorates the awful event, which visited the Euphrates Expedition 21st May 1836, near Is Jaría, about 85 miles above Ana.

The Expedition was descending the river with full prosperity, when it was visited suddenly by a hurricane, with tremendous violence. Both vessels were placed in imminent danger, from which the *Euphrates* escaped. But the *Tigris* foundered, and with her were lost the chief part of the souls on board.

It then gives the names of twenty members of the expedition who lost their lives, and adds:

Sir Robert Grant and members of the Council at Bombay, in admiration of the labours and exertions with which the Expedition had surmounted its many and great difficulties up to the above moment and sympathising in the unhappy fate of the brave men who died, have raised this monument to their memory. And the British Residents in India with a generous and charitable liberality at the same time collected largely to afford pecuniary relief for the surviving relatives.

The tragedy in this way commemorated was really only a single incident in a prodigious and extraordinary undertaking. Over a

<sup>1</sup> See Fraser, *Travels*, Vol. II, pp. 1-165.

<sup>2</sup> See Budge, *By Nile and Tigris*, London 1920, Vol. II, p. 292. The tablet is now reinstated in the wall of the British Consulate-General at Basrah.

## FOUNDATIONS IN THE DUST

century later it may still be said of the Euphrates Expedition that 'it stands really without parallel in the history of similar undertakings, alike for the novelty and magnitude of the enterprise, for the scale upon which it was got up, for the difficulties which it had to encounter and for the importance of the results obtained'.<sup>1</sup> Organized by the British Government under the especial patronage of King William IV, its official purpose was 'to survey the northern part of Syria, to explore the basins of the rivers Euphrates and Tigris, to test the navigability of the former, and to examine in the countries adjacent to these great rivers the markets with which the expedition might be thrown in contact'. Its ultimate intention was to establish regular railway or steamer communications with the Far East by way of the Euphrates valley. Yet the vision of its promoters ranged far beyond a mere route to India. In Mesopotamia they aimed 'to restore life and prosperity to a region renowned for its fertility in ancient times and generally regarded as the seat of the earliest civilization'.

Even when stated in its simplest terms the plan of campaign, as conceived in London, sounds fairly formidable. The component parts of two fairly large iron paddle-steamers were to be transported by ship to the mouth of the Orontes west of Antioch. From there they were to be carried overland by camel to Birejik on the Euphrates, re-assembled and manned for a slow voyage down that river to the Persian Gulf. During this voyage a complete survey was to be made of the Euphrates valley. Actually, of course, it embraced an immensely larger task, whose scope can be judged alone from the bibliography afterwards associated with it.<sup>2</sup> Ainsworth alone, who was attached to the expedition as surgeon and

<sup>1</sup> W. F. Ainsworth, *A Personal Narrative of the Euphrates Expedition*, London 1888, Vol. I, p. vi.

<sup>2</sup> Some of the principal titles are: Col. (afterwards Major-General) Chesney, *Expedition for the Survey of the Rivers Euphrates and Tigris*, 2 vols., London 1850; Chesney, *Narrative of the Euphrates Expedition*, London 1868 (and a volume of twelve sections of a large map, and two additional maps of Arabia and adjacent countries London 1847); W. F. Ainsworth, *Researches in Assyria, Babylonia and Chaldæa, forming part of the labours of the Euphrates Expedition*, London 1830; Ainsworth, *A Personal Narrative of the Euphrates Expedition*, 2 vols., London 1888.

## BIRTH OF ASSYRIOLOGY

geologist, but particularly interested in archaeology as well, covered an immense amount of ground in his incidental explorations. His own 'Narrative' account refers to surveys of the Syrian coast, the Gulf of Issus and Cilicia, the Orontes Valley and Hollow Syria, the Upper Euphrates and ancient Comagene, the greater part of Babylonia, the Lower Tigris and Karûn Valleys, the 'Persian Appenines' and Persepolis, and finally a visit to Kurdistan in search of coal.<sup>1</sup>

In his publication of the results of all these varied investigations Chesney, with his passion for thoroughness, even went so far as to embody a definitive and comprehensive account of all the work previously accomplished in the same field, with the result, as Ainsworth points out, that the new facts tended to be buried in the vast mass of collected matter.

The equipment of the expedition, including the unwieldy components of the two steamers, were unloaded at the mouth of the Orontes in the spring of 1836, but owing to difficulties of transport, abnormal floods and continual sickness among the European personnel, it did not reach the Euphrates until many months later. At Birejik, light earth-works were thrown up forming an enclosure, which was christened 'Fort William' and afterwards served as a base of operations. After enormous difficulties in assembling them, the steamers, now known as the *Tigris* and *Euphrates*, were eventually launched and started their journey down the river in March 1836. A surviving steel-engraving shows them with enormous side-paddles, very tall funnels heavily stayed, and foremasts intended for the auxiliary use of sails. Each day a navigating officer went ahead some twenty or thirty miles in a small boat to take soundings and plot a deep channel for use on the following day.

The disaster to the *Tigris* occurred, not as is often supposed at Anah, but some eighty-five miles further up the river at a point a little below the confluence of the Euphrates and the Khabur. Here the Euphrates is hardly wider than, say, the river Thames at Richmond, and the manner in which the *Tigris* came to be capsized must appear quite incomprehensible to anyone unfamiliar with the astonishing freaks of weather which one comes to expect in Iraq. On a

<sup>1</sup> There is an abundance of surface coal in the great valley between Amadiyah and Zakho.

## FOUNDATIONS IN THE DUST

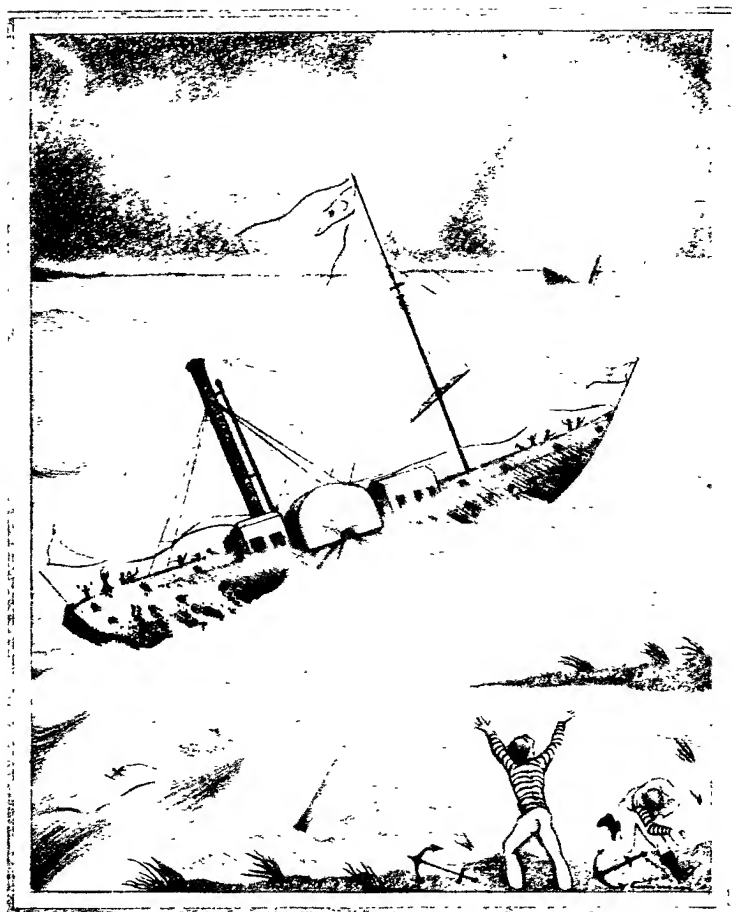
clear day in early spring mountains of black clouds will blow up in a few seconds, against the apparent direction of wind, and deluge the country in hail-stones heavy enough to knock a child unconscious. Pouring rain will turn suddenly into an opaque dust-storm, and later reappear through the same dust, spattering the earth with liquid mud. The sudden storms of wind do actually reach hurricane strength, and one has seen the entire contents of a camp kitchen blown nearly a mile across country.

Ainsworth's description, therefore, of the storm which hit the Euphrates Expedition on a Saturday in March 1836 is not only very vivid but entirely convincing. The two boats had spent the morning filling up with firewood and at midday moved off in bright sunshine with just enough breeze to ripple the water. The *Tigris*, as Chesney's flagship, was ahead, and the *Euphrates* had just come into line a hundred and fifty yards behind, when a black cloud appeared low over the desert to the south-west. Ainsworth says:

As the cloud neared us, the sky assumed an appearance such as we had never before witnessed, and which was awful and terrific in the extreme. A dense black arch enveloped the whole of the horizon, and the space beneath the arch was filled up with a body of dust, of a brownish orange colour, whirling round, and at the same time advancing towards us with fearful rapidity. . . . At this moment the hurricane came on us—a warm dry wind laden with the fragrance of the aromatic plants of the wilderness, followed in a few moments by a tremendous blast of wind with some rain in large drops. The crash broke upon us like heaven's own artillery, and the hurricane seemed as if bent upon hurling both steamers at once to the bottom of the foaming river.<sup>1</sup>

Chesney at once signalled to Cleveland, who was commanding the *Euphrates*, to follow as closely as possible, and turned his ship in towards the left bank. This she presently reached, but striking with some force, the recoil prevented the two sailors, who leapt out on to the bank with anchors, from making her fast, and the wind catching her bows she was swept clean round and back into mid-stream, narrowly missing the *Euphrates*, owing to the prompt action of Cleveland who violently reversed his paddles. By this time the

<sup>1</sup> Ainsworth, *Narrative*, Vol. I, p. 390.



The Disaster to the Euphrates Expedition

CHURCHILL ARCHAEOLOGICAL

THE EUPHRATES EXPEDITION  
1880-1881  
BY  
CAPTAIN R. B. SEYMOUR  
AND  
CAPTAIN G. A. H. REYNOLDS  
WITH  
AN  
APPENDIX  
BY  
CAPTAIN R. B. SEYMOUR



## BIRTH OF ASSYRIOLOGY

whole scene was being enacted in almost pitch darkness owing to the thickness of the dust and the density of the clouds. The *Tigris* was being driven broadside on, heeled over so that her paddles would not function, with the wind tearing the boards off her paddle-boxes like dead leaves, and waves four or five feet high beating in through the broken saloon windows. She was already down by the bows and sinking when a gleam of light showed the left bank of the river only twenty yards away. Before reaching it she sank, and the entire crew of thirty-four, who had clustered in the stern, were flung into the turbulent water. The fact that twenty of them were drowned was afterwards partly attributed to the suction of the sinking vessel and partly to the fact that most of them were probably unaware in which direction they should swim. Chesney himself, who took a last-minute dive, was washed by the waves over the river bank into a cornfield, where he was presently joined by the sodden remains of his own Bible. When the storm moved on, leaving the same tranquil sunshine which had preceded it to mock its effects, he found himself lying amongst 'several cases of Birmingham and Sheffield goods, including guns and pistols, intended for presents, as also two casks of salt meat, nearly two hundredweight each, which had apparently been blown ashore by the force of the wind'.

The *Euphrates* meanwhile, after nearly being rammed by the *Tigris*, had reached the bank safely and succeeded in mooring herself securely, thus avoiding any danger of capsizing. Her officers, including Ainsworth, now hastened to the scene of the disaster. But little could be done. Some of the bodies of their drowned companions were found the following day disfigured beyond recognition by vultures. Others occasionally appeared during the following days, drifting alongside the *Euphrates* after she had progressed fifty or sixty miles further down the river. At Anah, Chesney left one of his officers to await the early autumn, when the river would reach maximum low-water, and to salvage all that he could from the wreck. He then proceeded in the one remaining ship to complete the main task for which the expedition had been financed. He successfully reached the Shatt al 'Arab and afterwards also navigated the *Tigris* upstream as far as Baghdad, but during an attempt to do the same by the *Euphrates*, there was a serious breakdown in

## FOUNDATIONS IN THE DUST

the engines, and, the funds of the expedition being almost exhausted, the attempt was abandoned.

In his report to the British Government, Chesney's major findings were partly negative. The Euphrates would *not* be suitable for regular steam navigation owing to dangerous rapids and a rapidly shifting course. Also the construction of a railway parallel to it would present formidable engineering problems owing to the rocky character of much of the country on either side. Navigation of the Tigris, however, below Baghdad was shown to be not only practicable but easy, and Chesney's pioneer work resulted a little later in the establishment of the famous Lynch service of river steamers from Basrah to Baghdad.

With Chesney's final assemblage and correlation of the results of all the exploration and research of previous travellers in Mesopotamia, surface exploration was brought to a temporary pause, and the stage was set for the melodrama of the first excavations. It was an ideally propitious circumstance that the discoveries in which they resulted were to have their counterpart in Rawlinson's study in Baghdad, where his brilliant work on the cuneiform texts made their interpretation increasingly practicable. Summer 1844 already found him comfortably established in the Baghdad Residency, which is now described as 'a house built on a grand scale with large and numerous apartments, necessitating an enormous staff of servants, cooks, grooms, stable-boys, attendants of all kinds, coffee-grinders, pipe-fillers, etc., etc'.<sup>1</sup> Of his work he wrote: 'The interest in the inscriptions with which my original researches had inspired me had never flagged; it was sharpened perhaps by the accidents which had so long operated to delay its gratification; and I thus hastened, with eager satisfaction, to profit by the first interval of relaxation that I had enjoyed for many years, to resume the thread of the enquiry.' Even the summer heat of Baghdad was not sufficient to deter him. Finding the house too hot to work during the day, he built a *chardag*, or summer house, overhanging the river at the end of the terrace. This was mostly constructed, like the *aghoul*s used to-day, of aromatic camel-thorn, and imitating the cultivators of the upper

<sup>1</sup> G. Rawlinson, *Memoir*, p. 142.



H. G. Rawlinson in his *chardag* at Baghdad

GOVERNMENT

OF

INDIA

OFFICE

OF

SECRETARY

TO

THE

GOVERNMENT

OF

INDIA

OFFICE

OF

SECRETARY

TO

THE

GOVERNMENT



## BIRTH OF ASSYRIOLOGY

Euphrates, he rigged up a tall water-wheel, turned slowly by the current of the river, which poured a continual stream of water over the little building.

The Residency in his day became filled with strange pets. A tame mongoose roamed loose about the house and grounds, while a leopard or lion-cub was often to be seen asleep beneath his chair as he worked. Under these conditions the greater part of his famous memoirs and dispatches were written.

## *Chapter Seven*

### LAYARD AND BOTTA

OF all the great Englishmen whose names have appeared and reappeared in this story, there is not one to whose writings one returns with greater relish than to those of Austen Henry Layard. It is not so much the content of his narrative, though that in itself is sufficiently fascinating; nor is it his style, which has little pretension to improve upon the familiar idiom of early nineteenth-century English. His special gift is enthusiasm. For, with the possible exception of Buckingham, no writer whose youthful orientation brought him eventually to the Middle East shows a zest so great and so apparent for the justification of his original predilection. Rich's 'weary pilgrimage' was a concept which to Layard must have been incomprehensible. His energy never flagged and his high spirits were seldom abated, save when compelled by circumstances to remain inactive or thwarted in an attempt to reach some remote goal.

In his early journeys he travelled light and unattended, and like many another, who in later days has attained an official position in which he found his freedom of movement and behaviour restricted by oriental convention, he afterwards recollected these days with increasing nostalgia. Writing in 1849, he says:

I look back with feelings of grateful delight to those happy days when, free and unheeded, we left at dawn the humble cottage or cheerful tent, and lingering as we listed, unconscious of distance and of the hour, found ourselves, as the sun went down, under some hoary ruin tenanted by the wandering Arab, or in some crumbling village still bearing a well-known name.<sup>1</sup> No experienced dragoman measured our distances or appointed our stations. We were honoured with no conversations by Pashas, nor did we seek any civilities from governors. We neither drew tears nor curses from the villagers by seizing their horses or searching their houses for

<sup>1</sup> One is reminded of Flecker's line, 'Beyond the village which men still call Tyre'.



Austen Henry Layard in Bakhtiari Costume



## LAYARD AND BOTTA

provisions; their welcome was sincere; their scanty fare was placed before us; we ate, and came and went in peace.<sup>1</sup>

It is not altogether surprising that the almost crazily ambitious journey eastwards which Layard and Mitford planned together in London in 1839 did not turn out exactly as they had expected. At Phillipopolis (Plovdiv) in Bulgaria, Layard fell ill with gastritis, and had to submit himself to the attention of 'an Armenian gentleman who had studied medicine at Edinburgh'. He says: 'He bled me twice copiously, and, moreover, made a large circle with a pen and ink on my stomach, which he ordered to be filled with leeches.' The consequent loss of blood so enfeebled him that it was some weeks before he was able to rejoin Mitford in Asia Minor. Reaching Jerusalem in January 1840 they again parted company, while Layard went off by himself on what Mitford rather disparagingly described as 'an excursion in the Hauran', but what was in fact an almost foolhardy escapade for which, having strongly discouraged him, the British Consul in Jerusalem washed his hands of all responsibility. Riding with a single Arab as a guide he passed through the bandit-infested Wâdi Musa and reached Petra, his primary objective, without serious mishap. In the famous valley, though plagued and incommoded in every imaginable way by a resident band of Bedouin cut-throats, he made a fairly leisurely study of the ruins, and it is interesting to note that, unlike many visitors in more recent times, his criticism of the architecture was unimpaired by enthusiasm for the glamour of its setting. He did not in fact hesitate to call it 'debased and wanting both in elegance and grandeur . . . a bad period and a corrupt style'.<sup>2</sup>

Layard now set out to return northwards, with the idea of passing by Damascus and rejoining Mitford in Aleppo for the journey to Baghdad. Undismayed by a succession of extremely unpleasant adventures on the road, he succeeded in visiting Kerak, Jerash, Ammân, and other ancient cities on the way. Near Kerak he was set upon and robbed of all his clothes and equipment excepting his

<sup>1</sup> Austen Henry Layard, *Nineveh and its Remains*, 2 vols., London 1849; Vol. I, p. 2.

<sup>2</sup> Layard, *Early Adventures*, London 1887, p. 17.

## FOUNDATIONS IN THE DUST

double-barrelled gun, in which he took a great pride and with which he now succeeded in defending his own life. By sheer pertinacity he persuaded a powerful local sheikh to insist upon the restoration of his property, and continued on his way with only minor losses. But before reaching Damascus he was robbed again and arrived eventually in pouring rain at the house of Mr. Wherry, the British Consul, penniless, half-naked, and on foot. He was able to recollect this occasion with some amusement thirty-eight years later, when he entered Damascus as the Queen's Ambassador to the Sultan, and was given a record ceremonial reception by Midhat Pasha, who was then Governor.

Layard next took the road across the Lebanon to Beyrout, visiting Baalbek on the way, and so travelled northwards to Aleppo, where he found Mitford impatient and about to continue the journey without him. 'He consented' says Layard, 'to remain there a few days more, to give me and my mare a little rest, of which we were very much in need.' On 18 March they left together for Mosul, following almost exactly the same route, by Urfah and Nisibis, which we have seen Buckingham take twenty-four years before. On 2 May they arrived in Mosul.

For Layard it was an eventful first visit, since it laid the seeds of his interest in the Assyrian mounds. Both Ainsworth and Christian Rassam happened to be in Mosul at the time and they accompanied Layard and Mitford<sup>1</sup> on a visit to Qal'at Sharqât and the mounds of Ashur, which the Germans excavated seventy years later.

They encamped on the way near the sulphur springs of Hammâm Alil, where to-day there is a rather squalid and ill-tended watering-place. Outside the village an ancient *tell* rises to a considerable height and from its summit, looking far down the Tigris valley, Layard had his first view of Nimrûd, the great mound whose buried treasures were later to make his name a household word. At Hammâm Alil it is also interesting to remember that he was within a few miles of Tell Hassunah, the earliest village settlement yet found in Iraq, whose excavation in 1944 has carried back the story of Mesopotamian civilization to a remote antiquity at that time unimaginable. Having

<sup>1</sup> See C. J. Gadd, *Stones of Assyria*, London 1936, p. 14.

## LAYARD AND BOTTA

reached Sharqât, the party made a prolonged examination of the ruins of Ashur, now known to be the birthplace of the Assyrian nation, which Ainsworth shrewdly identified as probably 'associated with the Assyrian cities of Nineveh and of Nimrûd or Resen'. They then returned to Mosul, where Layard made his first investigation of the mounds of Nineveh.

Layard's first impressions of Iraq are most excellently described in a striking passage where he contrasts the 'Mediterranean' character of Syria, with the very different aspect of the country he is now visiting for the first time. As he says:

The graceful column rising above the thick foliage of the myrtle, ilex, and oleander; the gradines of the amphitheatre covering a gentle slope, and overlooking the dark-blue waters of a lake-like bay; the richly carved cornice or capital half hidden by the luxuriant herbage; are replaced by the stern, shapeless mound rising like a hill from the scorched plain, the fragments of pottery and the stupendous mass of brickwork occasionally laid bare by the winter rain. . . .

For the visitor to Iraq:

The scene around is worthy of the ruin he is contemplating; desolation meets desolation; a feeling of awe succeeds to wonder; for there is nothing to relieve the mind, to lead to hope or to tell what has gone by.

He adds:

These huge mounds of Assyria made a deeper impression on me, gave rise to more serious thoughts and more earnest reflection, than the temples of Balbec, and the theatres of Ionia.<sup>1</sup>

By his prompt appreciation of the obscure qualities which are the country's central distinction, Layard places himself in a class apart among European travellers.

For the moment, however, neither he nor Mitford had yet modified their initial intention of reaching India, and Baghdad was the next stage in the journey. They made their way down the Tigris by *kelek*, and as the creaking raft undulated over the rapids beside Nimrûd, Layard obtained a new and even more tantalizing view of

<sup>1</sup> Layard, *Nineveh and its Remains*, Vol. I, p. 6. Other titles by Layard are *Nineveh*, *Nineveh and Babylon*, etc.

## FOUNDATIONS IN THE DUST

the principal mound with its conical peak representing the ruined *ziggurat*. He says:

The spring rains had clothed the mound with the richest verdure, and the fertile meadows, which stretched around it, were covered with flowers of every hue. Amidst the luxuriant vegetation were partly concealed a few fragments of bricks, pottery and alabaster, upon which might be traced the well defined wedges of the cuneiform character.

It must have been soon after this that he wrote to a wealthy merchant friend in England proposing that he put up some money for excavations, and maintaining that the antiquities to be discovered 'would amply repay the expense'. There is no record of his receiving any reply.

Layard's first impression of Baghdad is perhaps sufficiently characteristic to be worth quoting. He says:

We continued to float through these endless groves of palm trees, the air, laden with delicious odour of the orange and citron trees, until, sweeping round a bend of the river, we came in sight of the city rising majestically on its banks—with its innumerable painted domes and minarets, its lofty walls and towers, its palaces and painted kiosks. It seemed to be all that I had pictured to myself of the City of the Caliphs and the sojourn of Haroun al Rashid.

He adds that after landing he was doomed to disappointment:

I found that, instead of the magnificent capital whose distant view had enchanted me, I was in the midst of an assemblage of mean, mud-built dwellings under a heap of ruins. . . .<sup>1</sup>

Arrived at the Residency, there is a prolonged reference to the character of the establishment and to Taylor, himself an erudite orientalist with whom this narrative by chance has so far been little concerned.<sup>2</sup> The visitor observes:

<sup>1</sup> Layard, *Autobiography and Letters*, London 1903, Vol. I, p. 327.

<sup>2</sup> H. J. Ross says: 'Col. Taylor . . . was so good an Arabic scholar that when the Cadi or the Mufti met with a difficult passage in some old manuscript and were not sure of the correct reading, they sent or went to him. He never left his house and was always to be found in his study poring over his Arabic books. Unfortunately, his knowledge died with him, as he never wrote anything.' (*Letters from the East*, p. 34).

## LAYARD AND BOTTA

Colonel Taylor's wife was an Armenian lady, whose family came originally, I believe, from Isfahan. He had two daughters, one of whom was married to Captain, afterwards Admiral, Lynch, who was then in command of the so-called Euphrates expedition. . . .

He also speaks with approval of Taylor's young officers, Lieutenants Jones, Campbell, and Selby:

Young men of enterprise and intelligence, taking a lively interest in all that concerned the country in which they were employed and its inhabitants, employing themselves while engaged in their professional duties in geographical and archaeological researches.<sup>1</sup>

Plainly Layard and Mitford enjoyed their short stay in Baghdad and the 'agreeable and intelligent society of the small English colony'. But the time soon came to continue their journey.

The two of them now joined a caravan making for Kermanshah and Hamadan. They followed the same route by which we have seen Ker Porter, Baillie-Fraser and others arriving in Iraq from Persia, and which in very recent times became a minor artery of American war-supplies for Russia. Visiting the rock-sculpture at Tak-i-Bustân, he encountered the French artist, Flandin, who afterwards collaborated with Botta in producing his brilliantly skilful records of the Assyrian reliefs found by the latter at Khorsabad. For the moment, with the assistance of Coste, an architect-archaeologist, he was busy making drawings of these Sassanian and other sculptures on behalf of the French Government. At Hamadan they found the Shah encamped with his entire court and a shabby and disreputable-looking army. He had been contemplating a campaign against Baghdad, but had changed his mind and was now returning to Teheran. The circumstance afforded Layard and Mitford an opportunity for making a direct application for the *firmâns* necessary to the continuation of their journey, and after just over a month of delay and procrastination these were granted. During this time Layard had the opportunity of studying the cuneiform inscriptions at Behistun, which greatly revived his interest in a subject already sufficiently absorbing. Combined with this a growing conviction of the possibilities offered by the Assyrian mounds now increased

<sup>1</sup> *ibid.* p. 329.

## FOUNDATIONS IN THE DUST

his reluctance to continue his journey eastwards. When the time came to leave Hamadan he and Mitford had already decided that their paths lay in different directions.

While Mitford made his way east, aiming for Kandahar and the Indian frontier, Layard conceived a new plan. This was to travel south from Isfahan through the territory of the wild Bakhtiyari tribes to Shuster and visit the ruins of ancient Susa. Leaving Hamadan, he was now accompanied by a rather objectionable Persian commissar, deputed for the purpose by the terms of his new *firman*, but well mounted on a horse requisitioned by this gentleman on the same authority. He still wore the Persian costume in which he had left Baghdad, and with the crown of his head shaved, 'leaving a ringlet on either side', and his hair and beard 'dyed a deep shining black with henna and rang', he must have made a handsome picture.

In Isfahan Layard was delayed some weeks, partly by the business of obtaining effective recommendations to the Bakhtiyari chieftains whose areas he would pass through, and partly by a recurrent fever. Here there was no lack of European society. He lived at first in the house of a French missionary, a M. Boré, whom he amusingly describes as 'a religious enthusiast, very ardent and zealous in promoting the interest of his country—a kind of politico-religious propagandism, much encouraged in the East by all French governments'. Flandin and Coste had also arrived from Kermanshah and for a time he saw much of the three Frenchmen. Later, however, their preoccupation with politics and offensive suspicion of his own motives in travelling became so tiresome that he was compelled to avoid their company. Of the three, Coste was probably the most sympathetic character, and Layard tells a good story to illustrate his capacity for absorption in his work. Asked by Layard to draw a finely carved Sassanian capital which he had found in a remote part of the city, Coste rode off at once to do so. 'Dismounting, he seated himself on a stone, and passing his arm through his horse's reins commenced his sketch. After finishing it he found to his surprise that his horse had disappeared. A thief had slipped the bridle off the animal's head, and had led it away, leaving the reins on the artist's arm.'

Once started again on his travels, Layard's curiosity carried him

further and further from the beaten track. He spent many months in Khuzistan and among the Bakhtiyari, studying their life and speculating as to the possibilities of European trade with their various markets. The results of all his investigations he embodied, on his return to Baghdad, in a memoir which was eventually published in 1846 in the *Journal* of the Royal Geographic Society and earned him the Society's gold medal.

There is no space here to follow Layard's innumerable adventures amongst these wildest of all Persian tribes. In the early days, before his bona fides and prestige were established, it became a commonplace to be stripped and robbed every few days of his travels. Yet he invariably escaped with his life, and as time went on succeeded more and more often in recovering his property. The summer of 1841 found him at Shuster, deciding that personal considerations made it necessary to return to Baghdad, by way of Basrah, and, as was now usual with him, he arrived at both places in turn, penniless and half naked. A sailor on board an English merchant vessel lying at anchor in the Shatt al'Arab above Basrah was astonished to be hailed authoritatively in English by what appeared to be a threadbare and dishevelled Arab. At Baghdad Dr. Ross,<sup>1</sup> returning with a party of European ladies and gentlemen from an early morning ride, found himself at the city gate addressed by a grimy figure in a tattered 'aba with bleeding feet and bare shaved head, who nevertheless spoke unmistakably with the voice of Austen Henry Layard. Actually this last adventure had come too near disaster to be pleasant. North of Hillah he had been set upon by a party of Shammar Arabs, and since he was wearing a *tarboosh*, mistaken for a Turk. On the point of being dispatched with a spear, he was rescued by the leader of the party, a young sheikh who, hearing him speak English, took him to be Dr. Ross and ordered his release. Layard had completed the journey barefoot and hatless in great pain and

<sup>1</sup> H. J. Ross says: 'I was sorry to have missed my namesake, Dr. Ross of Baghdad, who has as great a love of animals as myself. Among the pets allowed to roam at will about his house is a leopard, who puts his paws on the windowsill and gazes down into the street below. When a sheep or a donkey passes he springs down upon them and breaks their necks, leaving the doctor to pay the damage.' (*Letters from the East*, p. 37)

## FOUNDATIONS IN THE DUST

privation. Ross himself, when he heard the story, at once sent a messenger to the paramount sheikh of the Shammar (then as now called Sofuk), who returned with the whole of Layard's property, a profuse apology, and a promise that he could, if he wished, in future pass through Shammar territory 'with a tray of gold upon his head'.

Layard remained in Baghdad long enough to receive replies to the letters which he now wrote home. During this time he declined Taylor's offer of hospitality for reasons of economy. In spite of perpetual thefts he had not yet exceeded the two hundred pounds with which he had left England over two years before, and did not yet wish to do so. He therefore rented a tiny mud hut, outside the Residency compound, but near enough to be within easy reach of Taylor's library.<sup>1</sup> Here he sat by day upon his well-worn carpet and slept at night upon the roof.

He did not, however, remain long idle. There were now on the Tigris two small armed steamers of the Indian Navy, called respectively *Assyria* and *Nitocris*. Layard made friends with Lieutenant Selby, who commanded the *Assyria*, and as soon as his mail arrived safely from England, the two of them went off together to Basrah to satisfy Layard's curiosity as to the navigability of the Karûn river, a waterway which he thought could bring Shuster within reach of the Shatt al'Arab. He later paid another lengthy visit to Khuzistan.

Early in 1842 there were indications that the Sultan of Turkey was about to declare war on Persia. The quarrel concerned an alleged infringement of Turkish territorial rights at Mohammerah, and since Layard had been an eye-witness of much that had happened, Taylor requested that he should travel to Constantinople and inform the British Ambassador, Sir Stratford Canning, of the possibilities of mediation. Layard agreed to this proposal and left Baghdad in June accompanied by a *tatar*. He was thus provided with the opportunity of paying a second visit to Mosul, and of meeting Botta, whom the French had just appointed as consular agent.

<sup>1</sup> cf. Layard, *Autobiography and Letters*, Vol. I, p. 339, for an account of Taylor's library.

## LAYARD AND BOTTA

It was primarily the publication in Europe of Rich's *Memoirs and Narrative* which had been responsible for Paul Emile Botta's appointment. In particular, Julius Mohl of the French Asiatic Society had been inspired by the obvious possibilities of the excavations in the Mosul district to insist most strongly upon the careful choice and special briefing of the new agent. His convictions were now to prove justified beyond even his own expectations. Botta also was to show himself well qualified for the role allotted to him. Trained as a naturalist and son of a well-known historian, he already had considerable experience of diplomatic work in the Middle East, and soon adapted himself to the labyrinthine paths of Moslâwi intrigue. The necessity for so doing perhaps needs some emphasis.

The city of Mosul has an individual character which differs as widely from the market-towns of south Iraq as that of Nineveh must have differed from the state-capitals of Babylon. First recognizable as Xenophon's 'Mespila', it became a walled city early in the Christian era, and capital of a province which always approximated to ancient Assyria. It was often largely separated from southern Mesopotamia, and from late 'Abbasid times onwards often attained complete independence. It will be remembered that in the map connected with the Sykes-Picot agreement it was located within the French 'sphere of influence', and its inclusion in the state of Iraq was in doubt until some years after the First World War. But whatever the reason for its basic individuality it is impossible to ignore the strangely conflicting sentiments to which it has tended to give rise among western visitors. Two British writers, for instance, who came to know it in the final years of the Ottoman Empire, found little good to say. One was Canon Wigram,<sup>1</sup> whose chapter on what he calls the 'Burden of the Newer Nineveh' begins with the cautious understatement: 'There are more pleasant places in the world than the city of Mosul.' Yet he gives the most racy and amusing account of life in the town, with whose 'corruption and confusion'<sup>2</sup> he plainly much enjoyed his temporary association. For

<sup>1</sup> Rev. W. A. Wigram, *Cradle of Mankind*, London 1914, chap. IV.

<sup>2</sup> H. G. Ross gives a good example of the sort of thing which could happen in Mosul at that time. He says: 'A most extraordinary thing happened here one day, the guard at the north gate sounded the alarm; and like a whirlwind a large

## FOUNDATIONS IN THE DUST

Sir Mark Sykes, on the other hand, no abuse is too violent. He made his second visit to Mosul at about the time when the new railway seemed about to reach Iraq, and seriously proposed that the city should be by-passed, since 'the standing nuisance of this sink of disease and horror will not be mitigated, but rather increased by wealth; and if Mosul, in its present condition, becomes the chief town of a flourishing northern Mesopotamia, it will certainly contaminate the surrounding locality with the same sinister influence as Antioch of old spread over North Syria'.<sup>1</sup>

Sykes clearly did not like either Mosul or the Moslâwis. Here is another passage whose violence creates the impression of personal bitterness. He says:

By night robbers stalk untouched from house to house, and the time of rest and darkness is made fearful by the cracking of pistols and confused cries of strife. By day, drunkenness and debauchery are openly indulged in. The population is rotted by the foul distemper, corrupted and rendered impotent by drink, stupefied and besotted by vice. The degradation of the city folk is not only physical but mental. Tales are whispered of dark and hideous sorceries and incantations—the noisome stench, as it were, of the charnel house of that dead Paganism which the Cross and Mohammed have slain, but have as yet been unable to annihilate.

These are strong words, which, thirty years after they were written, need not be taken with any great seriousness by a prospective visitor to modern Mosul. He will find an increasingly clean and orderly town, boasting an aerodrome, one of the best public gardens in the country, as well as a railway station, first-class hotel, metalled roads, and a steel bridge across the Tigris; as a result of which its

troup of wild boar rushed through the town, scattering everyone they met like chaff before them; they tore through the narrow bazaars, upsetting sweetmeat-sellers and fruit and water vendors and, as though possessed of the devil, precipitated themselves down the city wall about sixty feet high and were all killed or maimed. It was supposed they had met a lion and losing in their terror all fear of man, had dashed straight through the town.' (*Letters from the East*, pp. 21—2).

<sup>1</sup> Sir Mark Sykes, *The Caliph's Last Heritage*, London 1915, p. 338.

## LAYARD AND BOTTA

comfortable residential parts are beginning to extend into the area of ancient Nineveh.

Yet the Mosul in which Botta found himself must have approximated more closely to that of Wigram and Sykes. In those Ottoman days the morality of the Pashalik took its colour largely from the character of the Pasha himself, and the contemporary governor, Mohammed Keritli Oglu, was an unpleasant individual. Layard laconically observes that 'nature had placed hypocrisy beyond his reach. He had one eye and one ear; he was short and fat, deeply marked by the small-pox, uncouth in gestures and harsh in voice'. Having referred to his revival of the tax called *dish parasi* on villages which he visited, as compensation for wear-and-tear on his teeth while eating their food, and his well-known gambit of pretending to be dead in order to punish and confiscate the property of those who openly rejoiced, Layard also mentions the effects of his rule. He says:

The villages and the Arab tribes had not suffered less than the townspeople. The Pasha was accustomed to give instructions to those who were sent to collect money, in three words—'Go, destroy, eat'; and his agents were not generally backward in entering into the spirit of them. The tribes, who had been attacked and plundered, were retaliating upon caravans and travellers, or laying waste the cultivated parts of the Pashalik. The villages were deserted, and the roads were little frequented and very insecure.

Such was the authority with whom Botta had to deal in his negotiations for excavating facilities, and a false start was consequently understandable. Rich's mention of antiquities discovered beneath the houses on the Nabi Yunus mound led him first to make investigations in that quarter; but a storm of opposition from the guardians of the Moslem shrine induced him to transfer his attention to Kuyunjik. In December 1842 the first modest trenches were cut in the summit of the palace-mound, and thus was inaugurated a century of Mesopotamian excavation.

A chance circumstance now resulted in a second and this time momentous change of plan. While Botta was burrowing somewhat ineffectively in the surface debris of Kuyunjik, finding only inscribed bricks and fragments of alabaster, a native of Khorsabad, a village

## FOUNDATIONS IN THE DUST

fourteen miles to the north, brought news of another mound named after the village. His stories of sculptured stones<sup>1</sup> eventually induced Botta to visit it, and to cut a long story short, in March 1843 he decided to transfer to Khorsabad the work which he had begun at Kuyunjik. Almost at once his workmen laid bare the tops of limestone slabs, sculptured in relief with Assyrian figures. Within a few days it was clear that an astonishing and epoch-making discovery had been made, and Botta was able to dispatch to Mohl his famous message: 'I believe myself to be the first who has discovered sculptures which with some reason can be referred to the period when Nineveh was flourishing.'

Let us now glance at the city discovered by Botta as we know it to-day. Dûr Sharrukin, as it was originally called, was intended by King Sargon II to be the new capital of Assyria. At the end of the eighth century B.C. it was he who chose the site, laid out the mile-wide fortified quadrangle with its seven gateways and raised the vast platform at the centre of the north-east wall, on which his palace was to be built with its foundations twenty metres above the ground. The palace itself included a *ziggurat* and three small temples in its area, while larger temples and other secular buildings clustered around the base of the platform, enclosed in a powerful inner fortification.

When Botta came to Khorsabad in 1843, it was the mound representing the ruins of the palace and its platform which first attracted his attention. On its flat top were the houses of some Shebek peasants, and it was near these that he cut his first trench. It encountered the first of a hundred or so chambers, halls, and corridors, all of which he opened up during the succeeding months, finding the walls of almost all of them to be lined with exquisite sculptured bas-reliefs

<sup>1</sup> Here is significant confirmation of the ignorance among Europeans of Arabic literature, referred to on the first page of this book, for—'Khorsabad, or Khishtabad, is mentioned by the early Arab geographers. It is described as a village occupying the site of an ancient Assyrian city called "Saraoun", "Saraghoun"; and Yakuti [*sic*] declares that soon after the Arab conquest considerable treasures were found among the ruins'. (Layard, *Nineveh and its Remains*, Vol. I, p. 149). The astonishing accuracy of local tradition had deviated very little in twenty centuries from the true Assyrian name—Dûr Sharrukin or 'Sargon's Town'.

## LAYARD AND BOTTA

representing gods, kings, battles, sieges, and religious ceremonies. Between the sculptured pictures were large areas covered with raised cuneiform inscriptions. All the principal doorways were flanked by human-headed winged bulls or lions carved from gigantic monolithic slabs. When Botta's first dispatches began to reach Paris, the astonished French found themselves presented with a seemingly endless succession of pictures, portraying in the greatest detail the daily life, appearance and history of the Assyrians—a people till then remote and half-mythical, whose name was familiar mainly in connexion with their ill-treatment of the Biblical Hebrews. For the moment, in fact, Botta did not even know the name of the king who appeared in all his finery at the head of a procession in one of the reliefs.

The promptitude and enlightenment of the French Government's reaction to the situation, and the munificence of their response to Botta's appeal for funds were most laudable, and characteristic. It was at once decided to send Flandin to copy the reliefs, and that on the way the Ambassador at Istanbul should acquire for him a *firmân* protecting Botta from interference in his work by the local government. Unfortunately, however, there were delays, and Flandin did not actually arrive until May of the following year. By that time Botta had suffered every imaginable obstruction, and during the winter had been compelled to close the excavations.

In considering the events which followed this first marvellous discovery at Khorsabad, one has sometimes permitted oneself to wonder whether it did not come a century too soon. The unskilled labour and consequent crudity of excavating method, the bigoted ignorance and vandalism of the peasants, the distracting opposition and deliberate obstruction of the local authorities, aggravated by the perversity of its motives, and finally the complete lack of proper facilities for packing and transporting the sculptures, all combined to try the patience and test the ingenuity of Botta and his successors almost beyond human endurance, while they spelt ruin and destruction for a great part of their finds. Many of the Khorsabad slabs, for instance, were cracked and insecure. When Mohammed Pasha maliciously boycotted Botta's work, temporary wooden struts were fixed to hold them in place; but the peasants stole the wood at night and

## FOUNDATIONS IN THE DUST

the slabs were shattered. One of the finest bull-colossi had to be abandoned on the road to Mosul, owing to the collapse of the trolley conveying it, and was burnt into gypsum by the peasants. The disaster at Kurnah sent a great part of the Khorsabad collection to bottom of the Tigris. It is hard to resist the reflection that much of this wastage would have been avoided had the Assyrian palaces remained safely embosomed in the earth until the infant science of archaeology had reached maturity, and the land of the Assyrians attained a more equitable rule.<sup>1</sup>

Botta had made great friends with Layard when he passed through Mosul in 1842 on his way to Istanbul. The *tatar* with whom he was travelling had a three-days' wait for dispatches, and this gave the two young men an opportunity to discuss at length the relative merits of mounds they had both seen. Layard afterwards confessed to finding the Frenchman good company, but commented unfavourably on his weakness for opium-smoking, a habit which he had picked up in China. Botta was at that time still preoccupied with Kuyunjik, and Layard did not hear of the Khorsabad discoveries until some months after reaching Istanbul.

The British Ambassador at the Sublime Porte, to whom Layard's introduction was addressed, was Sir Stratford Canning. He was a remote and dignified personage and Layard at first had some difficulty in obtaining access to his presence. In his anxiety to deliver his dispatch, he had only permitted himself time to 'add a few details of European dress' to his Bakhtiyari costume, so his appearance for one thing was probably against him. At all events, after being kept waiting a great while, as he says, 'a fashionably-dressed young gentleman appeared, asked me roughly for the dispatches of which I was the bearer, informed me that the Ambassador was too much occupied to see anyone, and turning on his heel left the room without deigning to listen to what I had to say'. Layard, who had been riding day and night across Asia Minor at Taylor's request and with the express

<sup>1</sup> Apropos, it is an ironical reflection that the admirably conducted American expedition which, under the guidance of Gordon Loud, in 1932-5 excavated the citadel buildings at the base of the palace platform, with all the skill and proficiency made possible by modern science, was rewarded with extremely little in the way of movable antiquities.

## LAYARD AND BOTTA

purpose of seeing Canning, was excusably angry at this brusque treatment. He accordingly wrote a letter of protest to the Ambassador and prepared to continue his journey as far as Vienna. He was in fact about to embark in a ship bound for the mouth of the Danube when overtaken by a *kawass* bringing a letter of apology from Canning. It assured him that the 'gentleman of the Chancery' had been reprimanded, and ended with the words: 'Instead of going away, come and dine here to-morrow.'

This was the beginning of a most fruitful association. Canning with his experience and judgement at once appreciated the peculiar talents of the young explorer, and saw that the Anglo-Russian mediation between Turkey and Persia now foreshadowed could be based on his first-hand knowledge of the controversy. He therefore proposed that Layard should enter and remain in his service until such time as the preliminary negotiations might be complete, and that meanwhile he should temporarily occupy himself with certain unofficial political missions in the Balkans. 'Mediation' in the Mohammerah dispute did not, as Canning had expected, take place until many months later. The solution then accepted by the British Government in deference to Russia bore no relation whatever to the joint recommendations of himself and Layard and could hardly have been more grossly unjust to Turkey. Yet it fell to his lot to communicate to the Porte both the nature of the decision and the intention to enforce it. Through adversities such as these a strong friendship grew up between Layard and Canning. Layard remained in the service of the Embassy for over two years, during which time he undertook a succession of ever-more complicated missions and eventually became one of Canning's most intimate counsellors. But in spite of Canning's urgent representations to the Foreign Office that his services should be rewarded by an official appointment, by 1845 there still seemed little hope of this materializing. As his disappointment increased, he began to grow restless.

All through the time he remained in Istanbul, news had continued to reach Layard of Botta's discoveries at Khorsabad. His intense interest in the subject was shared by Canning, and it is plainly to Botta's credit that he magnanimously allowed the two Englishmen access to his periodical reports, which passed through Istanbul in

## FOUNDATIONS IN THE DUST

transit to Paris. Layard had continually expressed a conviction that Khorsabad could be only one of many mounds covering the ruins of Assyrian palaces, and had repeatedly pointed to Nimrûd as another promising example.<sup>1</sup> Early in 1845 Canning, who was himself about to return to England on leave, and no doubt felt some qualms of conscience about the future of his young protégé, began seriously to consider providing a sum of money to enable Layard to put his theories to the test. In the autumn of the same year he informed him that he was prepared temporarily to incur the expense of excavations at Nimrûd in the hope that the results would justify a subsidy from more official quarters for their continuation.<sup>2</sup> It need hardly be said that Layard wasted little time in taking advantage of this offer. Once the *firmân* authorizing him to excavate had been obtained from the Porte, he took only twelve days to reach Mosul.

<sup>1</sup> His interest in Nimrûd had again been revived by an English missionary called Badger, who visited it in 1844 and made an even more detailed examination. When he visited Istanbul on his way home to England, Layard had the benefit of his impressions, which were not actually published until some years later. (cf. A. P. Badger, *Nestorians and their Rituals*, London 1852, Vol. I, p. 86 ff.)

<sup>2</sup> In later years the acquisition of the Halicarnassus Marbles by the British Museum was largely due to Canning's initiative.

## Chapter Eight

### NIMRÛD

FROM this point onwards the story of Layard's excavations is taken up by his own narrative in *Nineveh and its Remains*, a book which on publication in 1849 attained instant popularity. He mentions in a letter to Mitford that a year's sales had been eight thousand copies, 'which will place it side by side with *Mrs. Rundell's Cookery*'.<sup>1</sup>

Arrived in Mosul, he was introduced by Rassam, the British Vice-Consul, to Mohammed Pasha, in whom he at once recognized a familiar type. He did not therefore satisfy the old Cyclop's obvious curiosity as to the purpose of his visit. Instead he enlisted the help of H. J. Ross, the well-known sportsman, who was at the time in commercial partnership with Rassam. Together they loaded a *kelek* with horses, greyhounds, guns and other paraphernalia as if for one of Ross's usual hunting expeditions.<sup>2</sup> Surreptitiously they included in the equipment a certain number of excavating tools and engaged a stonemason. On 8 November they set off down the Tigris for Nimrûd. In contrast to Layard's impressions on his previous visit in the spring, they found the country everywhere parched by the summer heat and ruined by the predatory rule of the Pasha. At Nimrûd, which they reached the same evening, the mound itself was stripped of all foliage and the surrounding villages in ruins, the Arab settlers having withdrawn to safety beyond the Zab river and resumed the Bedouin habit of living by raids. At Naifah they found a single Jehesh sheikh in hiding with his family and it was in his hovel that they spent their first night.

Layard could not sleep. Anticipation of what the next few days held in store had overtaxed his imagination and now brought a succession of half-waking dreams. He says:

<sup>1</sup> Layard, *Autobiography and Letters*, Vol. II, p. 191.

<sup>2</sup> cf. H. J. Ross, *Letters from the East*, p. x.

## FOUNDATIONS IN THE DUST

Visions of palaces underground, of gigantic monsters, of sculptured figures, and endless inscriptions, floated before me. After forming plan after plan for removing the earth, and extricating these treasures, I fancied myself wandering in a maze of chambers from which I could find no outlet. Then again, all was re-buried, and I was standing on the grass-covered mound.

The Sheikh meanwhile had travelled by night to the nearest settlement and returned at dawn with six Arabs who were prepared to work. Layard put them to dig at two widely separated points in the main mound, and by the evening of the same day they had in each case partially cleared a chamber lined with slabs of alabaster and decorated not with reliefs, but with neat cuneiform inscriptions. In a single day's work, with six men, he had in fact discovered two of the principal palaces of the Assyrian kings.

The ancient city of Calah, of which Nimrûd is the site, was the second capital of Assyria, after Ashur and before Nineveh or Khorsabad. It occupies a very fertile tongue of land in the angle between the Tigris and its tributary, the Greater Zab. To-day the river is separated from the ruins by about half a mile of low ground, but its ancient bed is easily distinguishable washing the foot of the city walls. The extent of the city itself is less clearly defined, but, as at Nineveh and Khorsabad, by far the most formidable feature is the platform upon which the palaces were built. This is a double square three hundred metres wide with its long axis oriented northwards. At the north-west corner a high conical excrescence represents the ruins of a small *ziggurat*. The two buildings which Layard's first soundings had encountered were afterwards known as the North-west and South-west Palaces.<sup>1</sup>

During the next few days he increased his gang to eleven men and among other things cut a trench in the conical mound at the north-west corner of the platform, which surprisingly proved to be solid mud-brick. The function of a *ziggurat* was, of course, completely unknown at that time, and it did not occur to him to connect it with the similar structure at Khorsabad, which Botta had provisionally identified as an 'observatory'. Meanwhile there could be little doubt that the news of his activities must by now have reached

<sup>1</sup> See Layard, *Nineveh and its Remains*, map facing p. 332, Vol. I.

Mosul, and at the end of the week he felt that the time had come to visit the Pasha and offer some explanation. His instinct was correct. After greetings and an exchange of compliments, Keritli Oglu congratulated him on his discovery of buried treasure and to prove that his information was well substantiated, produced a grubby morsel of paper containing a minute fragment of gold leaf. In the filling of one of the chambers which he had already cleared, Layard had come upon a delicately carved object which was in fact the forerunner of the now famous Nimrûd Ivories. It still retained traces of gilding, and what he now saw was a tiny flake of gold detached from the ivory, which he had not bothered to recover.

Layard's suggestion that on his return to Nimrûd he should be accompanied by an agent of the Pasha's to take charge of any gold which he had already found or should find in the future provided a temporary solution of the problem, but he was no longer under any illusion as to the opposition which was in store for him. What he did find regrettable was that, when it came, a good deal of it proved to have its origin in the French Consulate. From Botta he had never received anything but open-minded friendship and co-operation. With Rouet, Botta's temporary replacement, things were different, for he at once introduced an atmosphere of petty jealousy and international rivalry. Before Layard returned to Nimrûd he found that Rouet's agents were travelling round the country 'opening up mounds' at random, in a feverish race to stake their claims to new discoveries. He himself felt obliged to join in an undignified scramble in which neither side was rewarded with any success.

Meanwhile work continued at Nimrûd with thirty men directed by a foreman. Winter rains had now started and in his hovel at Salamiyah, Layard lived in considerable discomfort. The roof leaked continually and his nights were spent 'crouched up in a corner or under a rude table surrounded by trenches to carry off the accumulating waters'. In the South-west Palace he continued to clear chambers lined with inscribed slabs, but these appeared from certain indications to have originally belonged to an earlier building and to have been re-used. Finally, on 28 November, the tops of two slabs appeared, covered with bas-reliefs. At the moment of their discovery there was a violent storm, but the workmen, now

## FOUNDATIONS IN THE DUST

greatly excited, continued to work in the streaming rain until the sculptured pictures were completely cleared. The reliefs on each slab were in two registers separated by a band of cuneiform inscription, and represented battle-scenes, in one of which the siege of a walled city was dramatically depicted. They also were evidently in secondary use and had been somewhat damaged in the process of re-setting.

A few hours after this discovery Layard received a call from Da'ūd Agha, captain of the Turkish irregular troops stationed nearby, with whom he had already become close friends. Da'ūd's manner now made it plain that he had bad news, and Layard at once assumed quite correctly that he had instructions from the Pasha to stop the excavations. In Mosul that evening Keritli Oglu informed him that his excavations were disturbing some Moslem graves on the summit of the Nimrūd mound and must therefore be discontinued. Returning disconsolately to Salamiyah he again encountered Da'ūd Agha, who reluctantly admitted that, if there were no graves, he had instructions to *make* some, and that he and his men had spent an exhausting day removing headstones from a neighbouring cemetery. 'Indeed', he said, 'we have destroyed more real tombs of the True Believers, in making sham ones, than you could have defiled, between the Zab and Salamiyah.'

Actually Layard had little difficulty in persuading the Pasha's *cawass*, who now accompanied him, that it would be necessary to retain some of his workmen for purposes of cleaning and recording the slabs already exposed, and as the Turk rarely considered the three-miles' ride from Salamiyah to the mound as part of his duties, he was able to continue with a good deal of surreptitious excavation. In this way he discovered a variety of new sculptures including 'a crouching lion', a pair of damaged winged bulls, and 'a human figure nine feet high'. Having thus established beyond all possible doubt that important antiquities were contained in the mound, he decided to inform Sir Stratford Canning of the necessity for a *firmân* protecting him from interference of the sort he had already experienced. Soon after his letter had been dispatched to Istanbul, one of his principal stumbling-blocks was suddenly removed, by the deposition of Keritli Oglu and his replacement by a just and enlightened

official of the new school. Accordingly, while awaiting new developments in the local administration, Layard determined temporarily to re-bury his sculptures and to spend Christmas with Rawlinson in Baghdad.

It will be remembered that Rawlinson had arrived in Baghdad to take up his appointment as Resident in 1843, and Layard had not since then visited the Residency. This, therefore, was the first meeting between the two men. Contrasting their characters in his *Memoir*, Canon Rawlinson's disparagement of Layard's academic attainment makes commendation of his practical ability seem patronizing. ('He was not a scholar, or a man of any great culture, or of any wide reading.')

<sup>1</sup> Yet it is possible to maintain that qualities such as linguistic ability and unfailing ingenuity, combined with imaginative sensibility and good taste, are a possible substitute for other forms of 'culture'. In any case, Layard's brief stay at the Residency on this occasion saw the beginnings of an association most profitable to science and of a life-long friendship.

Returning to Mosul in early January, Layard found that many changes had taken place. The new governor, Isma'il Pasha, had already to a large extent conciliated the tribes. Many had returned to their villages and a lot of belated cultivation was in progress. Furthermore, the heavy rains which had fallen almost continually since he had been away had clothed the countryside in an early garment of green. Isma'il made no objection to his continuing his excavations, but opposition now came from a new source. This was the *qâdî*, or principal judge of the town, an elderly bigot who had succeeded in stirring up some of the more fanatical religious elements with a cock-and-bull story about Layard's inscriptions being subversive of the principles of Islam. Layard therefore judged it best to postpone any obvious activity for the time being, and did not in fact restart work until mid-February. He had now enlisted the help of Hormuzd Rassam, an intelligent Chaldean Christian and brother of the British vice-consul who had greeted him on his arrival in Mosul. Rassam became from now onwards his overseer and general agent, and later, as it will be seen, developed some pretensions to be an archaeologist. Security in the Nimrûd district was

<sup>1</sup> G. Rawlinson, *Memoir*, p. 152.

## FOUNDATIONS IN THE DUST

now so greatly improved that it was possible to move their headquarters from Salamiyah to the village close by the mound and known by the same name. A team of thirty Nestorians, or as they are now called, 'Assyrians', formed the nucleus of their workmen, and these encamped on the summit of the mound. Layard had no difficulty in establishing friendly relations with the sheikh of the Abu Salman<sup>1</sup> who had now returned to his settlements, so there was no lack of unskilled labour.

Soon it was spring again, and once more Layard found himself enchanted by the ephemeral beauty with which the Mosul countryside adorns itself during this short season of the year. The pastures were deep in grass and flowers, and he describes how his *salûgi* greyhounds, tired from hunting, 'issued from the long grass dyed red, yellow or blue, according to the flowers through which they had last forced their way'. Finding the village huts verminous, he had moved out to camp in the open, as in fact is the almost universal practice among the people of that district during the month of April. Colloquially it is called *waqt al barriyyah*, 'the country time', and has something in common with the Jewish Feast of the Tabernacles.<sup>2</sup> Arab peasants bring dusty black tents to pitch on the greensward about their village; Kurds or Yezîdis build *chardags*, which are shelters of leafy branches over or beside a stream of running water. The children pick flowers, which their elders wear behind their ears or tucked into their head-dress. Even Christians of Mosul, migrate to the temporary hospitality of monasteries outside the town.

Seated before the door of his tent in the evening, after a successful day's work among the relics of another age, Layard was extremely happy. Here is how he recollected the scene afterwards:

<sup>1</sup> It was he who about this time took Layard to see Negûb (The Tunnel), an underground water channel dating from Assyrian times and entered from the bank of the Zab River. Here he discovered 'a slab covered with cuneiform characters, which had fallen from a platform and been wedged in a crevice in the rock'. In the half light he could see that it bore 'a genealogical list of kings', but returning some days later to remove it, he found that he had been anticipated by a party of Arabs who had maliciously or otherwise broken it in pieces.

<sup>2</sup> cf. Leviticus xxiii. 34.

As the sun went down behind the low hills which separate the river from the desert—even their rocky sides had struggled to emulate the verdant clothing of the plain—its receding rays were gradually withdrawn, like a transparent veil of light, from the landscape. Over the pure, cloudless sky was the glow of the last light. The great mound threw its dark shadow far across the plain. . . . The Kurdish mountains whose snowy summits cherished the dying sunbeams, yet struggled with the twilight. The bleating of sheep and lowing of cattle, at first faint, became louder as the flocks returned from their pastures, and wandered amongst the tents. Girls hurried over the greensward to seek their fathers' cattle, or crouched down to milk those which had returned alone to their well-remembered folds. Some were coming from the river bearing the replenished pitcher on their heads or shoulders; others, no less graceful in their form, and erect in their carriage, were carrying the heavy load of long grass which they had cut in the meadows. Sometimes a party of horsemen would ride up to my tent and, driving the end of their lances into the ground, they would spring from their mares, and fasten their halters to the still quivering weapons. . . .

The plain now glittered with innumerable fires. As the night advanced, they vanished one by one until the landscape was wrapped in darkness and in silence, only disturbed by the barking of the Arab dog.<sup>1</sup>

For Layard's readers at home, this passage must more than anything have evoked the world of the Old Testament. For those who have followed where he led, it is a nostalgic reality.

Now, indeed, he had good reason to be satisfied with the progress of his work. Temporarily he had abandoned the exploration of the South-west Palace. The building proved to have been destroyed by fire, and the sculptures, which had suffered considerably as a result, had also at some time deteriorated owing to long exposure to the weather. But a new sounding in the side of a deep gulley, which runs far into the mound on the west side, had produced most gratifying results. Here was an older palace from which, as he presently realized, some slabs must have been taken for re-use in the south-west building. But the sculptures which remained were undisturbed and in a fine state of preservation. The morning after this discovery, returning from a visit to the Abu Salman sheikh, he encountered two horsemen coming from the direction of the mound, who greeted

<sup>1</sup> Layard, *Nineveh and its Remains*, Vol. I, pp. 78–80.

## FOUNDATIONS IN THE DUST

him excitedly with the words: 'Hasten, Bey, to the diggers, for they have found Nimrod himself.' 'Nimrod' he found to be the head of a perfectly preserved winged bull colossus, which had just been exposed in one of the trenches. Rightly suspecting it to be one of a pair, Layard measured the distance according with a square-proportioned gateway, and by evening a second similar head had appeared above the ground.

The reactions of Layard's workmen can be imagined. Most disconcerting was that of one man who, on the appearance of the first head, at once flung down his basket and made off for Mosul, hardly pausing for breath until he reached the bazaar, where his semi-articulate tidings set the whole town in an uproar. This was a less fortunate circumstance, since poor Isma'il Pasha again found himself prevailed upon to summon Layard to his presence and temporarily veto any further discoveries.

Things had now reached a point where, without proper support from official quarters, Layard's individual efforts could not be expected to go further. He wrote to Canning, contrasting the magnitude of his new finds with the legal and pecuniary deadlock which he was at present facing, and asking for advice. As a result, one of his major difficulties was successfully solved. Canning, on retiring from his post as Ambassador, was provided by the Sultan, partly as a gesture of goodwill, with a *firmân* for Layard of a most generous character, and so strongly worded as to be capable of protecting him in the future from any kind of official interference. His second request, however, provided Canning with a more formidable problem. Suggestions which he had already made to the Trustees of the British Museum that Layard's finds were now of a nature to become the responsibility of a public institution, rather than of an individual, had so far been coldly received. He could now only repeat them in stronger terms, stressing that if the Treasury would subsidize the continuation of the work, the whole of the finds so far made should become the property of the Museum. Failing this, he threatened to club together with Rawlinson and make it a private enterprise, adding in fun, 'even at the expense of my daughter's expectations!'

It was perhaps Layard's own reports and sketches which, on reaching London, eventually convinced the Trustees of the gener-

## NIMRÛD

osity of Canning's offer. Yet the sum of two thousand pounds, which they were then induced to put at Layard's disposal, can hardly have seemed other than parsimonious. We have already remarked how Botta, at Khorsabad, in spite of the much more generous support afforded by his government, was still not in a position either to conduct his search or to handle his finds with the care and attention which their importance merited. So also Layard was now driven, against his own conscience and inclination, to expedients which have in later times laid his sponsors open to criticism. His purpose from now onwards was 'to obtain the largest possible number of well-preserved objects of art at the least possible outlay of time and money'.

A generation later, when the first American Assyriologists entered the excavating field, their comments on this subject were openly censorious. We may quote, for example, Hilprecht, who, towards the end of the century, directed American excavations in Babylonia. He says:

In the interests of science it remains a cause of deep regret that after his great discoveries, Layard did not at once find the same hearty support in England as his more fortunate French colleague so speedily had obtained in Paris. Not even an artist was dispatched to draw the sculptures and copy the inscriptions, though many of the monuments 'were in too dilapidated a condition to be removed', and though Layard 'had neither knowledge nor experience as a draughtsman—a disqualification which he could scarcely hope to overcome'. He was thus practically prevented by his own government from making a methodical exploration of Nimrûd. And this lack of method, system and thoroughness unfortunately remained a characteristic feature of most of the following English excavations in Assyrian and Babylonian ruins,—a lack felt by nobody more keenly than by Layard, Loftus and all the other great British explorers.<sup>1</sup>

Even Mr. C. J. Gadd, who has recently dedicated a beautiful publication<sup>2</sup> to the memory of Layard, *ad gloriam redintegrandam viri apud majores praeclari*, refers, albeit in measured terms, to the limitations, which could only have been imposed on his work, 'by a

<sup>1</sup> H. V. Hilprecht, *Explorations in Bible Lands*, Edinburgh 1903, p. 102.

<sup>2</sup> C. J. Gadd, *Stones of Assyria*.

## FOUNDATIONS IN THE DUST

body of men so inexperienced in excavation as the Trustees of that time necessarily were'.

And finally there is Layard's own apologia for the makeshift character of his own excavating. He says:

The smallness of the sum placed at my disposal compelled me to follow the same plan in the excavations that I had hitherto adopted, *viz.* to dig trenches along the sides of the chambers, and to expose the whole of the slabs, without removing the earth from the centre. Thus, few of the chambers were fully explored, and many small objects of great interest may have been left undiscovered. As I was directed to bury the building with earth after I had explored it, to avoid unnecessary expense, I filled up the chambers with the rubbish taken from those subsequently uncovered, having first examined the walls, copied the inscriptions and drawn the sculptures.

During the late spring of 1846, while Layard was awaiting his *firmân* and a decision about the future of his work, he passed the time by making a number of enjoyable expeditions into the surrounding country. One of these was to the strange, eerie ruins of the Parthian city of Hatrah, far out in the desert called Al Jasîrah, between the two rivers. On this occasion he was accompanied by 'a cheerful party of Christian and Mohammedan ladies and gentlemen from Mosul', and the freedom with which this considerable cavalcade travelled across country was a tribute to the improved security which Isma'il's rule had brought about. Layard's picture of the party leaving Mosul by the Cannon Gate and cantering southwards over the flowery uplands is a pleasant one:<sup>1</sup>

Our tents, obtained from the Pasha, and our provisions and necessary furniture, were carried by a string of twelve camels. Mounted above these loads, and on donkeys, was an army of camel-drivers, tent-pitchers, and volunteers ready for all services. There were, moreover, a few irregular horsemen, the cawasses, the attendants of the Mosul gentlemen, the Mosul gentlemen themselves, and our own servants all armed to the teeth. Ali Effendi [al 'Umari] was mounted on the Hebdan, a well-known white Arab, beautiful in form and pure in blood, but now of great age. Close at his horse's heels followed a confidential servant; who perched on a pack-saddle, seemed to roll from side to side on two small barrels, the

<sup>1</sup> Layard, *Nineveh and its Remains*, Vol. I, p. 83.

## NIMRÛD

use of which might have been an enigma had they not omitted a very strong smell of râki. The English lady [Mrs. Rassam] was equipped in a riding habit and hat. The two Englishmen, Mr. Ross and myself, wore a striking mixture of European and oriental raiments. Mosul ladies, in blue veils, their faces concealed by black horsehair sieves, had been dragged to the top of piles of carpets and cushions, under which groaned their unfortunate mules. Greyhounds on leashes were led by Arabs on foot. . . . The horsemen galloped round and round, now dashing into the centre of the crowd, throwing their horses on their haunches while at full speed, or discharging their guns and pistols in the air. A small flag with the British Colours was fastened to the top of a spear and confided to a Cawass.

Hatrah lies in the centre of the Shammar territory, and to this day it is usual to obtain guides for the final stage of the journey from the Shammar *shuyuk*. The main body of the tribe were then, as now, to be found at spring pastures somewhere between Hatrah and the Tigris, and, for so distinguished a party, a visit to Sofuk, the paramount sheikh, was essential. In this case it was not at once easy to obtain news of his exact whereabouts, and such scattered outposts of the tribe as they encountered were uncommunicative. He had naturally been on poor terms with Keritli Oglu and was for the moment taking no chances with the new Pasha. Finally, however, mounting a ridge above the Wâdi Qassab, Layard was confronted with the magnificent sight of almost the entire tribe on the move—the whole plain for miles covered with camels, asses, flocks and herds and strings of beautiful horses. For him Arab blood-stock had a particular fascination, and during this short sojourn among the breeders of some of the finest in the world, he was continually lost in admiration. On the previous day the sight of a young colt had drawn from him superlatives of the sort which, unlike Buckingham, he never wasted upon his fellow-humans. 'Light and elegant as a gazelle', she was struggling to free herself from the spear to which she was tied. 'Her limbs', he says, 'were in perfect symmetry; her ears long, slender, and transparent; her nostrils, high, dilated and deep red; her neck gracefully arched, and her mane and tail of the texture of silk. We all involuntarily stopped to gaze at her.' Within the next few days, between the Wâdis Qassab

## FOUNDATIONS IN THE DUST

and Jernâf, he was to be shown animals by whose pedigrees Shammar history was dated.

The party's entertainment by Sofuk is described by Layard with a great deal of picturesque detail. But since in recent years goat-hair tents and whole-roasted sheep, together with multiple matrimony and tribal lore, have become so much the stock-in-trade of mid-East travel literature, the changeless routine of such an occasion may here perhaps be taken for granted. Similarly, the ruins of Hatrah (like those of Petra) are becoming increasingly well known, and a characteristic freak of the most recent world upheaval has even left them bescribbled with the names of General Anders' Polish Army. To-day Sofuk's namesake and successor has a mansion overlooking the Tigris at Sharqât, surrounded by a strange exotic garden, to which his father, Ajîl Yawar, brought the flowers and shrubs of many foreign countries which he visited between wars. It is here that one is now entertained preparatory to a visit to Hatrah in a manner no less lavish and hardly more sophisticated than in Layard's day.

Back in Mosul, Layard found time to make a few soundings in Kuyunjik. In spite of the expostulations of the French Consul, which to him seemed little justified, he dug enough trenches to satisfy himself once and for all that remains similar to those at Khorsabad and Nimrûd existed somewhere in the mound. Next he made some excavations at a point in the northern line of mounds enclosing the city, which we now know to have been the 'Nergal Gate', and came upon the largest pair of winged figures yet seen. These were afterwards thought to have been destroyed, but in 1941 one complete bull and part of another were revealed by a heavy rainstorm, and are at present exhibited in situ beneath a temporary shelter. He then returned to Nimrûd itself and, anticipating the favourable outcome of Canning's negotiations with the British Museum, continued work on the new building with a fairly large gang of men. Slab after slab was laid bare and the wealth of beautiful sculpture became almost bewildering. Layard was amused by the reaction of his workmen and their curious identification of Assyrian figures. 'If it was a bearded man, they concluded at once that it was

## NIMRÛD

an idol or a *jin* and cursed or spat upon it. If a eunuch, they declared that it was the likeness of a beautiful female, and kissed or patted the cheek.' Soon he felt that enough was accumulated to send a representative collection to England. The fact that the first consignment of cases from Khorsabad had reached Baghdad and was about to be transferred to Basrah, where a French naval vessel, *Le Cormoran*, was awaiting them, introduced a quaint element of competition and was undoubtedly an extra incentive. Captain Felix Jones, who now enters the story for the first time, was then in charge of the little Tigris steamer *Nitocris*, and at Rawlinson's suggestion an attempt was now made by him to bring his vessel up as far as Nimrûd. Unfortunately he failed to get beyond the first rapids above Tekrit. In this way, much of the summer was wasted and Layard was compelled in the end to ship his slabs to Basrah by *kelek* and country-boat, having first reduced their weight by sawing off their backs. Since they did not eventually reach England till nearly a year later, the unedifying little race was lost by a wide margin.

So preoccupied had Layard been, that he had hardly noticed the increasing heat of the summer sun. But soon it could no longer be ignored. He says:

The change to summer had been as rapid as that which ushered in the spring. The verdure of the plain had perished almost in a day. Hot winds coming from the desert had burned up and carried away the scrub; flights of locusts, darkening the air, had destroyed the few patches of cultivation, and had completed the havoc commenced by the heat of the sun.

In Baghdad, Rawlinson would now be working in his damp little *chardag* overhanging the Tigris; so Layard, taking a leaf out of his book, ordered a recess to be cut in the bank of the river, where it rose perpendicularly from the waters edge. By screening the front with reeds and boughs of trees, and covering the whole with similar materials, a small room was formed. He admits, however,

I was much troubled with scorpions and other reptiles which issued from the earth forming the walls of my apartment.

In the end, it is not surprising that he began to feel the strain on his health of all his exertions, and by August had decided temporarily

## FOUNDATIONS IN THE DUST

to close the excavations, and spend the time, until autumn brought cooler days, in his favourite occupation of travelling among the mountain tribes.

This time his first objective was the villages of the Nestorian Christians in the Tiyari Mountains between Van and Urmia. His interest in this ill-starred minority had probably been aroused by the missionary Badger's account of his visit to their houses and again stimulated by the band of tough 'Assyrian' pick-men who formed the nucleus of his working gang at Nimrûd. He gives a fairly accurate account of their rituals and beliefs as contrasted with those of the Chaldean or Uniate branch of the same Church, whose principal villages, Tell Kaif and Tell Usquf, he visited on his return to Iraq. On the first day of this journey he took the opportunity of inspecting the site of Botta's now abandoned excavations at Khor-sabad. 'Since M. Botta's departure', he writes, 'the chambers had been partly filled up by the falling-in of the trenches; the sculptures were rapidly perishing; and, shortly, little will remain of this remarkable monument.'

Another delightful experience which had fallen to Layard's lot while travelling in the Shaikhân hills north of Mosul was that of attending the famous Spring Festival of the Yezîdis in their sacred grove at Shaikh 'Âdi. He learnt a great deal about this much-persecuted people and the obscure beliefs which centre around their propitiation of the evil principle. He observed the cleanliness and simple good taste of their villages, and in their shrines, to use the words of a modern writer, 'their capacity to be still and worship'. On his return to Mosul, therefore, finding by chance that Tahya Pasha was preparing an expedition to Jebel Sinjar, around which more Yezîdi tribes are grouped, he offered to accompany him. Layard's impressions of the Yezîdis make an intentional contrast with his description of the scene in the courtyard of the Sarai, where the Pasha's retinue were making ready to start.

The attendants of his Excellency were hurrying to and fro, laden with every variety of utensil and instrument; some carrying gigantic telescopes, huge bowls, in leather cases; others labouring under bundles of pipe-sticks, or bending under the weight of calico bags crammed with state documents.

## NIMRÛD

Finally the preparations were complete,

and as his Excellency placed his foot in the stirrup, the trumpets sounded as a signal for the procession to move onwards. First came a regiment of infantry, followed by a company of artillery-men with their guns. The trumpeters, and the Pasha's own standard, a mass of green silk drapery, embroidered in gold, with verses from the Koran, succeeded; behind were six led Arab horses, richly caparisoned with coloured saddle-cloths, glittering with gold embroidery. The Pasha himself then appeared, surrounded by the chiefs of the town and the officers of his household. The procession was finished by the irregular cavalry, divided into companies, each headed by its respective commander. . . .<sup>1</sup>

Needless to say, the commissariat arrangements had been entirely neglected, and at the first halt both men and beasts went supperless to bed.

Tahya had been at pains to impress on Layard that this expedition was being made, 'not with any hostile intention, but for the purpose of examining the state of the country'. At Tell 'Afar, the picturesque Turcoman market-town on the easternmost spur of the *jebel*, Layard had an opportunity of judging exactly how welcome to the country people this sort of visit would be. 'The commissariat was replenished from the scanty stores of the inhabitants. The houses were broken into and a general pillage ensued.' While the ingredients of the evening meal were in this way being obtained, Layard climbed to the ruined castle above the town and from this point of vantage he looked southwards over the once-fertile farmlands of Assyria, now rendered barren by misrule and insecurity. 'As the sun went down', he says, 'I counted above one hundred mounds, throwing their dark and lengthening shadows across the plain.'

Jebel Sinjar itself is a strange, isolated range of hills, high enough to be snow-capped in winter, but entirely surrounded by flat, arable country and pastureland. Its southern flank is chased with deep, rocky gorges, honeycombed with caves, and the principal Yezidi settlements are usually terraced into low foothills at the mouths of these gorges. In times of peace and security their cultivation spreads out into the plain, beyond the fruit gardens immediately surrounding the villages. Danger drives them back into the mountains to live

<sup>1</sup> Layard, *Nineveh and its Remains*, Vol. I, p. 310.

## FOUNDATIONS IN THE DUST

precariouſly in caves. So now, in ſight of the firſt of theſe ſettlements, the Pasha and his army were greeted by a deputation of Yezîdi elders, not, however, including the headmen of Mîrkhân, the village which they were approaching. Having failed to convince them of his peaceful intentions, the Pasha ſent a troop of irregulars forward to enter the village; but theſe were met with a volley of rifle-fire from the rocks above and two of them fell dead at the feet of Layard, who was with them. With ſuch provocation the ſequel was inevitable; the now-deſerted village was promptly plundered and burnt.

A few aged women and decrepit old men, too infirm to leave with the reſt, and found hiding in the ſmall dark rooms, were murdered, and their heads ſevered from their bodies. Blazing fires were made in the neat dwellings, and the whole village was delivered to the flames. Even the old Pasha, with his grey hair and tottering ſtep, hurried to and fro among the ſmoking ruins and helped to add the torch where the fire was not doing its work.

Next morning military operations were undertaken in earneſt againſt the Yezîdis hiding in the gorge behind the village. But every time a detachment of troops entered the valley they were decimated by accurate rifle-fire from the caves above. Eventually, their loſſes becoming ſerious, they were compelled to deſiſt. On the ſecond morning the Pasha ordered a freſh attack and, to Layard's aſtoniſhment, in order to encourage his men, advanced himſelf into the gorge and had his carpet ſpread on a rock.

Here he ſat, with the greateſt apathy, ſmoking his pipe, and carrying on a frivolous converſation, although he was the object of the aim of the Yezîdis.

Even this characteriſtically eccentric piece of bravado did not, however, improve the lot of his attacking troops, and another day paſſed without a ſingle Yezîdi caſualty. On the third morning there was no oppoſition; the caves were found empty, their occupants having ſlipped out in the night and eſcaped to ſafety over the watershed. The engagement was ended.

While the Pasha's retinue lingered at Mîrkhân attending to their dead and wounded, Layard took the opportunity of proceeding

## NIMRÛD

alone to visit the remaining Yezîdi settlements, including Beled Sinjar, the chief town of the district. In the latter he did not for some reason recognize the Roman fortress of Singara, so often mentioned by Marcellinus and other Latin writers, for he says:

It would be difficult to point out, with any degree of certainty, ruins at Beled Sinjar more ancient than the Mohammedan conquest.

Returning, still alone, to Mosul, he had the rare privilege near Tell 'Afar of seeing a fairly large herd of wild asses drinking at a spring. He must afterwards have been reminded of this occasion when the famous hunting-reliefs came to light, in the palace of Ashur-bani-pal at Kuyunjik.

## *Chapter Nine*

### SUBSIDIZED EXPLORATION

ON 1 November 1846 Layard reopened excavations at Nimrûd on a large scale. He now had the responsibility of administering public funds, and was subject in his work to the limitations imposed by the very detailed instructions received from the Trustees. He proceeded to build a modest expedition house just outside the village at Nimrûd and to establish his Nestorian workmen in a camp on the mound itself. From now onwards Hormuzd Rassam joined him permanently and proved an extremely efficient major-domo and general assistant. In the trenches he distributed his gangs at four widely separated points—in the old North-west Palace, in the South-west Building, whose sculptures had suffered so much from fire and exposure, in a 'Central Building' where little had so far been discovered except for the two winged colossi, and at a fourth point in the south-east corner of the mound.

The weeks which followed were more astonishingly rich in finds than perhaps any similar period in the history of Assyriology. 'Scarcely a day passed without some new and important discovery.' Layard had as yet had no opportunity of discussing his inscribed material with Rawlinson and was therefore still unable to identify the names of kings associated with the different palaces and the genealogical lists. Right up to the end of this first season's full-scale excavations, he still uses expressions like, 'the Khorsabad king' or 'the son of the builder of the North-west Palace'. In the marvellous reliefs surrounding the reception rooms of the latter building he could not recognize the life and accomplishments of Ashur-nasir-pal (883–859 B.C.) nor read the name of Esarhaddon (680–669 B.C.) on the slabs removed from here to the South-west Building and there set up with their faces to the wall ready for their backs to be re-sculptured. The Central Building also seemed to have been used as a quarry for the adornment of some later structure, for he discovered over a hundred sculptured slabs, 'packed in rows, one against the

## SUBSIDIZED EXPLORATION

other, and placed in a regular series, according to the subjects upon them'. What could have been a more acceptable find for one in search of removable antiquities and hampered by limited funds? Yet there was better still to come. A few metres further on his workmen encountered the corner of a polished black stone, and soon uncovered the now famous Black Obelisk of Shalmaneser III (858-824 B.C.)—to-day one of the choicest antiquities in the British Museum. Sculptured on all four sides, it has twenty small reliefs depicting, for the most part, foreign princes bringing tribute to the Assyrian throne. Could Layard but have known it at the time, it also created the first and most dramatic link between the Assyrian sculptures and the Old Testament, for the long inscription beneath the reliefs, recorded, amongst much other matter, the receipt of gold and silver from Jehu, son of Omri (*sic*), King of Judah.<sup>1</sup>

In addition to these major finds, Layard's trenches produced many minor sculptures and small objects—carved sphinxes, lion-pedestals, the famous Nimrûd Ivories with their curiously Phoenician-looking designs, copper objects and vessels of glass or alabaster. But so poorly equipped was he by modern standards to extract and handle anything but the best-preserved and most portable antiquities, that a pathetically small proportion can have survived except in his memory, or been adequately recorded in his faltering sketches. As a more fortunate successor in the same field, one may perhaps be excused for reiterated regrets on this score. Criticism of Layard's methods is at once disarmed by his frankness on the subject. Yet the impression left by his own account is none the less disturbing. One phrase in particular occurs with monotonous and painful regularity. It is a phrase made familiar by the early discoverers of Egyptian mummies, but which to-day would carry little conviction—'... entire when first exposed to view, it crumbled into dust as soon as touched. . . .'<sup>2</sup> Thus Layard says, for instance, of 'several (copper) helmets, some with arched crest', 'they fell to pieces as soon as exposed';<sup>3</sup> a sculptured pedestal consisting of twin lions, 'had been so much injured by fire, that I was unable to preserve it';<sup>4</sup>

<sup>1</sup> cf. 1 Kings xix. 16, and 2 Kings ix and x.

<sup>2</sup> Layard, *Nineveh and its Remains*, Vol. I, p. 353.

<sup>3</sup> *ibid.* p. 341. <sup>4</sup> *ibid.* p. 351.

## FOUNDATIONS IN THE DUST

iron armour was 'in so decomposed a state that I had much difficulty in detaching it from the soil. Two or three baskets were filled with these relics';<sup>1</sup> 'copper vessels of peculiar shape . . . fell to pieces almost immediately on exposure to the air, and I was unable to preserve one of them entire'; where walls were covered with painted frescoes, 'the plaster fell from the walls in flakes, notwithstanding all my efforts to preserve it'; most of the famous ivories 'on their discovery fell to pieces almost upon mere exposure to the air . . .';<sup>2</sup> and so on. To-day it is tempting to reflect how much could have been done with a little paraffin wax or plaster of Paris.

By the end of April 1847, in the North-west Palace alone, Layard had explored twenty-eight halls and chambers, some having plastered walls ornamented with brightly painted frescoes, but the greater part lined with sculptured slabs. He had also located thirteen pairs of gigantic winged bulls and lions. Since the British Museum had insisted that all discoveries which could not be removed must be reburied, the period during which this great array of sculptures and paintings remained exposed to view was an extremely short one. There was, however, at least one Englishman who visited the excavation before the dispersal began—a certain Mr. Longworth, who has left the most interesting record of his impressions in the form of a letter to the *Morning Post* of which he was a correspondent.<sup>3</sup> Like so many people seeing a Mesopotamian excavation for the first time, he was surprised to find Layard's palaces apparently so far beneath the ground and to have to descend into them by precipitous staircases. Yet his description must have effectively conveyed to the *Post*'s very large circle of readers the most vivid impression of the romantic character of the Assyrian finds.

Layard himself meanwhile returned to the problem of transport. On the last day of December 1846 he had watched a *kelek* laden with a second consignment of twenty cases float off down the Tigris, to be shipped from Basrah to England by way of Bombay. By May 1847 yet another consignment of sculptures was ready to leave. Included among them was the Black Obelisk and all the remaining

<sup>1</sup> *ibid.* p. 341.

<sup>2</sup> *ibid.* Vol. II, p. 9.

<sup>3</sup> *Morning Post*, 3 March 1847.

## SUBSIDIZED EXPLORATION

slabs which for the moment he felt justified in sending to England. Yet Layard still hesitated to fill in his trenches. In regard to the winged colossi, the British Museum had rightly decided that they should not be sawn up into sections for reassembling after reaching Europe, as had been done by the French at Khorsabad, but should remain in place with earth piled over them 'until some favourable opportunity should present itself to remove them entire'. To Layard this was the greatest disappointment, as he was naturally most anxious that examples of them should be seen in England as soon as possible. Finally, he decided to use his own initiative in the matter. He selected one lion and one bull from amongst the best-preserved sculptures and prepared for the prodigious task of loading them on to a raft. A little tackle was obtainable in Mosul—hemp ropes, a couple of pulley-blocks and a pair of screw-jacks. In addition he ordered one enormous cable to be made of palm-fibre, and constructed a powerful wooden cart, mounted on a pair of iron axles, which Botta had used for the same purpose at Khorsabad. Botta had, in fact, met with very little success in his early attempts to bring his bulls over the fifteen miles of ploughland from Khorsabad to the river, and one had had to be abandoned half-way. His 'cart' had wheels nearly a yard thick and was pulled by a gang of six hundred Yezidi and Shebek workmen (as may be seen in a fine engraving in Place's publication)<sup>1</sup>. On this subject Layard, in a letter home, permitted himself to be critical, saying that Botta could not be induced to abandon brute force in favour of mechanics. Yet, when himself eventually faced with the same problem, the only mechanics which he could contrive was a team of oxen, and these, perhaps intimidated by the nature of the object in the cart, refused to pull.

But first there was the task of transferring the colossi from their upright position to the horizontal, and so to the cart which awaited them at the foot of the mound forty or so yards away. Since the writer was responsible in 1934 for a similar operation in connexion with the transport to Baghdad of the last two bulls discovered at Khorsabad,<sup>2</sup> it may be of interest here to compare sizes and weights.

<sup>1</sup> V. Place, *Ninive et L'Assyrie*, Paris 1867, 3 vols., Vol. III, plate 44.

<sup>2</sup> Found in the Citadel Gateway in 1934 by the Oriental Institute of the University of Chicago: now ornamenting the Assyrian Gate, Baghdad.

## FOUNDATIONS IN THE DUST

The colossi are invariably carved, partly in situ, from a single slab of stone 18–24 inches thick. Layard's bull and lion measured about 10 feet square and a good deal of stone was sawed from their backs before dispatch. At Khorsabad these would have been comparatively small slabs. The pair moved from there in 1939 were 14 feet 6 inches square and weighed a little over 20 tons each. The single bull with its head facing sideways which the Oriental Institute transported in pieces to Chicago in 1929 (one of a pair flanking the entrance to the throne-room in King Sargon's palace) was 16 feet 6 inches square, and the largest fragment weighed 14 tons. Two even larger bulls facing forwards in the same entrance are also in fragments and have never been removed. They measure 18 feet square, and are as far as one knows the largest of which traces have yet been found. Nevertheless, if one calculates Layard's monoliths, when ready for lowering, at a minimum weight of 10 tons, the task was still a formidable one. They had first to be bound up in felts and matting in order to deaden the shock of any blow they might receive; their descent was then checked by ropes twisted around the projecting masonry behind them and hauled on by struggling gangs of workmen. Wooden props, used as a secondary check, were gradually and precariously removed as the great stone began to tilt over.

It is hard to know whether Layard's own description or his dramatic coloured illustration<sup>2</sup> give one the more vivid impression of this tense moment. In the trench, scores of half-naked Arabs directed by Mr. Rassam are hauling on the ropes or pouring water to cool them as they smoke and crackle, while the Nestorians easing the wooden props are in increasing danger of being crushed beneath the descending stone. On the surface of the mound above is a motley crowd of onlookers—Bedouins with their horses and camels and all the women from the village. In front of them stands Layard himself, his beard and long hair blowing in the wind, vainly attempting to make himself heard or to attract attention by throwing lumps of earth. As the angle of the stone increases, the shouts of the men and the excited screaming of the women rise to a crescendo. Finally, with 5 or 6 feet to go and the props no longer useful, the ropes all

<sup>1</sup> Layard, *Nineveh and its Remains*, Vol. II, p. 81.

<sup>2</sup> *ibid.* Vol. I, frontispiece.

## SUBSIDIZED EXPLORATION

break together and the sculpture settles with a crash on to the wooden platform prepared for it. As the dust clears away and the noise dies down, Layard leaps down, and finds to his enormous relief that no damage is done.

Meanwhile, a sort of railway-cutting had been dug from the palace to the edge of the mound and along this the bull was now moved on rollers (in exactly the same manner as it had been brought from the river by the Assyrians two and a half millennia earlier),<sup>1</sup> and finally coaxed on to its wooden cart. Again it may be interesting to compare the writer's experience of the same manoeuvre with the Khorsabad bulls in 1939. Cased in situ in wood and steel, these slabs weighed considerably more than twice as much as Layard's; yet now at last 'mechanical' methods could be used. In each case the mud-brick wall behind the bull was cut down to a convenient shelf at half the height of the stone. The head of the slab was then tilted back on to the shelf, its base was raised by jacks and tackle on an overhead beam, and the transport, which consisted of 20-ton White trucks supplied by the Oil Company, was backed into the cutting and slipped beneath the load.

Layard's bull again met with a major adventure on its short journey from the mound to the river bank. One wheel of the cart having stuck in the soft earth it became necessary to postpone further progress overnight. In the small hours the workmen who had remained on guard were attacked by a band of robbers, and the precious bundle received a direct hit from a musket-ball. The mark on the stone is visible to this day as the bull stands in the British Museum. The whole process was repeated with the winged lion, which, however, received a bad crack in the process of loading and eventually fell in halves. In the end both were successfully loaded on to *keleks* composed of six hundred skins each, and on 22 May 1847 Layard watched this new consignment of sculptures float off to Basrah, and returned to the mound to fill in his trenches.

A little money still remained from the British Museum grant, so before returning to Mosul Layard determined to make another attempt at Qal'at Sharqât. He unearthed a much-damaged life-

<sup>1</sup> See a relief depicting the disembarkation of a bull in Assyrian times. A. H. Layard, *Nineveh and Babylon*, London 1853, 2 vols., Vol. I, p. 113.

## FOUNDATIONS IN THE DUST

size statue in black stone, covered with an inscription of Shalmaneser II, which was already known to exist there and which was eventually safely transported to London. But apart from this he was extremely puzzled to find that his workmen encountered almost nothing at all. This was not, in fact, explained until more than half a century later, when the ruins of Ashur were most systematically excavated by the Germans, and its temples and palaces found to be constructed without the use of stone. The trenches of Layard and other early excavators were then found cutting through the crude-brick walls, which they had not had sufficient knowledge to detect or skill to trace. Ashur was the earliest capital of Assyria and by the most skilful research the Germans followed the material remains of its history back to Sumerian times. From theirs and other excavations we now know that in the Babylonian palaces of the second millenium B.C. painted frescoes adorned the lower parts of the walls.<sup>1</sup> The use of sculptured reliefs for the same purpose did not begin until after the Assyrian capital had moved to Nimrûd in about 880 B.C.

Disappointed at the failure of Sharqât to produce movable antiquities, Layard returned to Mosul and expended what little money remained on yet another sounding in Kuyunjik. He now had the measure of this peculiar mound to some extent, having realized that continued occupation in later years had left the Assyrian remains buried beneath some twenty or so feet of accumulated debris. He therefore began trenching deeply in the south-west corner, and this time, after some days, he met with success. Actually when the first calcined and crumbling slabs of the now famous Palace of Sennacherib were found, Layard himself was not present, having gone for a brisk morning walk on the Mosul side of the river. His stout foreman, Toma Shishman, therefore set off over the bridge at an exhausting jog-trot to bring the good news to his master and claim the traditional reward. He had the misfortune, however, to be out-distanced by two Kurdish girls, wives of the workmen, who swam directly across the Tigris on inflated sheep-skins, and almost without pausing to readjust their clothing, breathlessly announced the discovery to Layard.

<sup>1</sup> cf. results of Iraq Government excavations at 'Aqar Qûf.

## SUBSIDIZED EXPLORATION

Having finally established the existence of at least one Assyrian palace in the main mound at Nineveh, Layard at once realized that this was a fitting juncture to terminate his work. On 24 June 1847 he left Mosul for Istanbul and London, taking Rassam with him.

There could be no doubt that his two years' work among the Assyrian ruins had produced results of which he could be proud. He had identified the sites of the Biblical Calah (Nimrûd) and of Nineveh itself, and discovered the remains of no less than eight Assyrian palaces connected, as was subsequently proved, with such illustrious names as Ashur-nasir-pal, Sargon, Shalmaneser, Tiglath-pileser, Adad-nirari, Esarhaddon and Sennacherib. He had completed his own part in the transporting to England of some hundreds of tons of Assyrian sculpture. The official appreciation which awaited him at home may be recorded in his own words:

As a reward for my various services and for my discoveries, I was appointed an unpaid attaché of Her Majesty's Embassy at Constantinople.<sup>1</sup>

On his journey to England Layard took the opportunity of traveling through Italy and so renewed acquaintance with many family friends and haunts of his childhood. In Paris he again encountered Botta, who treated both him and the story of his discoveries with the generous enthusiasm so characteristic of him. Layard even found himself prevailed upon to face an assembly of the French *Académie des Inscriptions*, and the excited discussion aroused by his account of the Nimrûd sculptures prolonged itself into an extraordinary session on the following day. With the willing and generous co-operation of the French Government, who supplied a naval vessel for the purpose, Botta's own finds had already reached Paris in December of the previous year, and he himself was now at work on his magnificent publication, *Monument de Ninive*, five sumptuous volumes, four of which consisted of steel-plate reproductions of Flandin's beautiful drawings. So appreciative were the French of the real value of his finds, that in fact the sum granted for this production equalled, if not exceeded, that which originally made the excavations possible.

A few months later, on the establishment of the Second Republic,

<sup>1</sup> This is the final sentence of his *Early Adventures*.

## FOUNDATIONS IN THE DUST

the Consulate at Mosul was suppressed, and Botta was banished to an insignificant post in the Levant. He died in 1870.

In London, meanwhile, Layard as usual found that official enthusiasm over his discoveries manifested itself in a much less tangible form. An initial proposal by the Trustees that £4,000 should be spent on a publication similar to Botta's was refused by a Treasury too preoccupied by events in Paris to give much thought to archaeology, and the privilege of producing a folio of engravings from Layard's drawings eventually fell to the lot of John Murray's enterprising publishing house. Layard himself meanwhile devoted the next eighteen months to more popular accounts of his excavations from which we have already repeatedly had occasion to quote.<sup>1</sup> Nor did the transport of his actual finds from Basrah to England arrange itself with the ready facility which Botta had experienced. Even the journey to India involved transshipment at Bushire, and at Bombay there was a further delay of many months during which no suitable vessel seemed available. Finally, fifty cases were loaded on to a newly built naval sailing ship which sailed for England on 12 April 1848. 'On the 23rd she was caught in a great storm, dismasted, and in considerable danger of foundering, but succeeded at last in weathering the tempest, and making Trincomalee in Ceylon, where she was ordered to refit.'<sup>2</sup> She reached Chatham in October.

When Layard attended at the museum to see the cases opened in the presence of the Keeper, an exasperating discovery awaited him. The larger sculptures had arrived in fairly good condition, but not so the cases containing small objects.

He found that there was within a mere jumble of fragments, so carelessly packed that they had suffered great damage. What was as bad was that the order in which he had himself placed the antiquities was disturbed, so that much information as to the origin of the pieces was lost, and even the fragments of broken objects which had been placed together were utterly dispersed. Worst of all, certain things of a portable size were no longer to be found, and appeared to have been abstracted.<sup>3</sup>

A protest lodged with the Bombay Government through the East

<sup>1</sup> Layard, *Nineveh and its Remains*.

<sup>2</sup> C. J. Gadd, *Stones of Assyria*, p. 48.

<sup>3</sup> *ibid.* p. 48.

## SUBSIDIZED EXPLORATION

India Company eventually elicited the explanation that while the cases were lying on the quay at Bombay the local British community had been overcome by curiosity to the extent of opening and examining their contents. There was even a record of a certain clergyman having given a lecture on the subject illustrated with 'squeezes' from the Black Obelisk! One favourable result of the considerable scandal which this discovery caused was that from now onwards the Bombay port authorities showed the most unwonted alacrity in transhipping and forwarding any further freight addressed to the British Museum.

Layard till now had little reason to be grateful for the encouragement which he had received from official quarters. With the public, however, things were different. As soon as the sculptures began to be exhibited, and *Nineveh and its Remains* to be read in English homes, there was no limit to the interest and enthusiasm which they aroused. For the mid-Victorian Britisher, vindication of his belief in the Bible and, at last, authentic details of the appearance and character of places and people mentioned in the Old Testament were a primary consideration. But, as Campbell Thompson suggests,<sup>1</sup> it may also be that there was something in the aggressive self-assurance of the Assyrian character and the nature of its contribution to human progress, which found a particular response in the imagination of contemporary Englishmen; that in fact 'these enormous Assyrian bulls had something in common with the ponderous conservative philosophy of the mid-Victorian period, with its unshakeable faith in the best of all possible worlds, with its definite social castes duly prescribed by the Catechism, all doubtless to be maintained *in saecula saeculorum*'. Soon their poets, from the Laureate downward, began deftly to introduce into their writings erudite references to the Assyrian finds rhymed in a jingle as irritating as Byron's reference to Claudius Rich. In schools Nimrūd and Khorsabad became subjects for prize essays, and a generation later we find them filtered through into such popular productions as *Helen's Babies* (1877) and the *Pirates of Penzance* (1880).

<sup>1</sup> R. Campbell Thompson, *A Century of Exploration at Nineveh*, London 1929, p. 41.

## FOUNDATIONS IN THE DUST

Even in these early days the measure of popular enthusiasm over Layard and his finds did not escape the Trustees of the Museum. By 1849 they showed signs of proposing a new campaign of excavations, and even applied to the Treasury for a grant of £4,000. For Layard himself the strain of satisfying popular curiosity had been considerable, and knowing his own particular predilection, it is not difficult to understand that life in England had begun to pall. He had no fondness for soft living and did not submit with any great enjoyment to the process of social lionization. His attitude could indeed be summed up in the words of General Gordon: 'I would rather live like a Dervish with the Mehdi than dine out each evening in London.' This being so, he had already dealt most effectively with the situation by getting himself appointed to the new Turko-Persian Frontier Commission, and was already on his way back to Mesopotamia. In Istanbul he received a direct request from Lord Palmerston to resume charge of the Assyrian excavations, and had no alternative to acceding to his wishes, though he had already learnt that the sum of £4,000 requested by the Trustees had been reduced to £3,000 and was to be spread over a period of two years. By October 1849, he and Rassam were back in Mosul and a new campaign of excavating had begun.

Layard's second expedition to some extent differed in character from the first. The Trustees sent out a succession of young artists to assist in copying the reliefs, but all of them for one reason or another turned out to have been unsatisfactorily chosen; Cooper was poorly when he arrived, and before long broke down completely in health; Bell was drowned owing to bathing contrary to everyone's advice in the Gomel river at Baviân; Hodder was so hopelessly young and inexperienced that he could take no responsibility. The funds did not suffice for the employment of any other European assistant. So it was not that the expedition was particularly better staffed or equipped than the previous one. It was rather a change in the relative importance of finds—a shifting of emphasis from sculpture to inscriptions.

Thanks to scholars like Rawlinson, the science of Assyriology had so greatly progressed during Layard's absence in England that simple cuneiform inscriptions could now be read with increasing

## SUBSIDIZED EXPLORATION

facility. The two great Assyrian libraries which he and Rassam were about to discover thus assumed an importance and fascination surpassing that of the now familiar sculptured reliefs.<sup>1</sup>

Yet the new sculptures which began to appear were in themselves by no means to be despised, especially since their subjects had suddenly become easily identifiable. For the past two years Ross and Christian Rassam between them had contrived to substantiate and maintain the British Museum's claim to the south-west corner of Kuyunjik by keeping a few men continually at work there, so it was in Sennacherib's palace that Layard now renewed his excavations. A few months later he was able to record:

In this magnificent edifice I had opened no less than seventy-one halls, chambers, and passages, whose walls, almost without exception, had been panelled with slabs of sculptured alabaster recording the wars, the triumphs, and the great deeds of the Assyrian king. By a rough calculation, about 9,880 feet, or nearly two miles, of bas-reliefs, with twenty-seven portals, formed by colossal winged bulls and lion-sphinxes, were uncovered in that part alone of the building explored during my researches.<sup>2</sup>

Pictures in one chamber recorded the adornment of Nineveh and the building of the palace. The Kuyunjik platform is recognizable in the process of construction by a gang of war-prisoners, and it appears protected on all sides by the waters of the Tigris and the Khosr. The royal guard, with their crested helmets, shields and spears, look on while another gang drag into position the partly-carved bulk of a winged bull colossus. Beyond are the wooded slopes of the mountains of Kurdistan and, over all, an inscription:

Sennacherib, King of the Universe, King of Assyria; white limestone, which at the command of the God was discovered in the land of Baladai, for the work on my palace, the people of hostile towns and the men of hidden mountains, conquered by my hands, quarried with picks and mattocks of iron, and I made it into colossal bulls for my palace-gates.<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> During the early days of his work at Nimrûd, Layard still did not know what a tablet was, and considered those he found as 'bits of pottery decorated in an unusual manner'. (cf. Budge *Rise and Progress of Assyriology*, p. 83.) It is extremely probable that much valuable inscribed material was lost in this way. <sup>2</sup> Layard, *Nineveh and Babylon*, Vol. I, p. 589.

<sup>3</sup>R. Campbell Thompson, *A Century of Exploration at Nineveh*, p. 38.

## FOUNDATIONS IN THE DUST

Then there is the famous 'siege of Lachish' where one sees the whole violent panorama of an attack on a walled city. Protected by covering-fire, the Assyrian sappers bring a pent-house against the wall and the assault is made up a prepared slope, while showers of stones, arrows and flaming torches fall from above. Over the figure of the king an inscription reads:

Sennacherib, King of the Universe, King of Assyria, sat upon a throne; the spoil of Lachish passed before him.<sup>1</sup>

In recording this inscription, Layard adds with pardonable pride:

Little doubt, I trust, can now exist in the minds of my readers as to the identification of the builder of the palace of Kuyunjik, with the Sennacherib of scripture.

All through these excavations odd fragments of cuneiform tablets had been coming to light, but these had not sufficed to prepare Layard for the astonishing haul which awaited him in the King's Library. It consisted of two large chambers, of which the whole area was piled a foot or more deep in tablets. The contemporary method of excavating, which consisted of tunnelling along the base of the walls, would not suggest that their removal was accomplished with any high degree of scientific care. However, when they reached the British Museum a number of them were still intact and others could be pieced together from scattered fragments.<sup>2</sup> Furthermore, the sequence of tablets, formidable in itself, was completed three years later by Hormuzd Rassam's discovery in the palace of Sennacherib's grandson, Ashur-bani-pal, of what appears to have been the remaining part of the state archives.

The total of documents represented by the two successive discoveries was by that time literally immense.

The total number of pieces which have been given a separate registration is round about 26,000, and of them something less than 2,000 are 'joins'. This leaves us with approximately 24,000 whole and fragmentary tablets, of which doubtless there are still many joins to be made.<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> *ibid.* p. 39.

<sup>2</sup> One tablet, for instance, numbered K. 2570, is composed of eleven fragments derived from the finds of six different expeditions.

<sup>3</sup> *ibid.* p. 133.

## SUBSIDIZED EXPLORATION

The tablets are divided according to their content into five groups: (1) historical literature; (2) the King's private library; (3) the library of the Temple; (4) correspondence; and (5) certain contracts. historical texts were often inscribed on large baked-clay prisms or cylinders, and these again seem to have presented some difficulty in removal, since the phrase 'unfortunately crumbling to pieces when exposed to the air' reappears in Rassam's account.<sup>1</sup> Their content was doubly important since they sometimes contained copyings verbatim by Assyrian scribes of ancient documents connected with Sumerian history.

But by far the greater bulk of tablets belong to the Royal Library, in which a great variety of subjects are represented.

Myths are represented by the Seven Tablets of the creation, wherein is described the beginning of all things and the creation of Man: the twelve tablets of Gilgamesh, who seeks that problem which has exercised the mind of man from time immemorial, what will happen after death, and how to obtain eternal life: the legend of Etana, who was carried up like Ganymede, on an eagle's back: Adapa, who having broken the wings of the south wind, was hauled before Anu in heaven to answer for his crime: Zu, the bird who carried off the Tablets of Fate; and many others. . . . Science held high place: medicine proper (distinct from magic) is accorded due position on some five hundred tablets, which give good, honest, practical prescriptions for every ill under the sun, from ear-ache and ophthalmia to childbirth and the restoration of the apparently drowned, showing a knowledge of some five hundred drugs: botany had recorded some hundreds of names of plants, with a vast display of knowledge of their properties: the chemist had already discovered the practical use of a large number of minerals from red lead to magnetic iron ore, and he has left an invaluable treatise on the components of glass and the glazes for pottery. The charlatan of the observation of the future by omens is equally represented: but as it gives us an insight into the tremendous knowledge of the heavens, the sun, moon and stars, it deserves in part to be promoted to the category of science. Philology too has its abundance of dictionaries.

<sup>1</sup> Given due care it is impossible for a terra-cotta object to be affected simply by exposure to air.

## FOUNDATIONS IN THE DUST

In fact:

We are still only halfway over the threshold in our knowledge of what this library once contained.<sup>1</sup>

During these years (1849-51) of his second expedition, Layard's activities were by no means limited to Nineveh itself. Simultaneously with Kuyunjik, his excavations at Nimrûd were renewed on a fairly large scale and with considerable success. He also found time to make soundings in many of the larger mounds of the Mosul district. Amongst those which to him seemed more or less disappointing were 'Bahshiqah', the mound now known as Tell Billah, where American archaeologists have since excavated a mid-second millennium city of great interest; Tell Abu Maria, where there now appears to have been a hunting-lodge of the Assyrian King Ashur-resh-ishi; Sherîf Khân, the ancient Tarbisu, a few miles north of Kuyunjik, where he even discovered two Assyrian temples and inscribed limestone slabs from a palace which Esarhaddon had built for his son, Ashur-bani-pal; and other mounds such as Karamles, Lak and Shemamyk, concerning which nothing further is known. In a renewed attempt on Qal'at Sharqât he found terra-cotta prisms of Tiglath-pileser I, while having carried his explorations as far afield as the banks of the Khabûr river, to-day beyond the frontier of Iraq, a tunnel driven into the mound called Arban encountered the most interesting archaic sculptures, including winged bulls carved and inscribed in the Assyrian manner and what appears in his sketch to be a really magnificent lion.<sup>2</sup> These were, presumably, simply left exposed and have, as far as one knows, never been further investigated.

For Layard, perhaps understandably, the criterion of interest in a mound corresponded to its content of portable antiquities. So it is not surprising that an attempt which he made in the autumn of 1850 to investigate some of the principal mounds of Babylonia proved one of the major disappointments of his career. From the beginning the prospect was a dismal one. Deprived of the support of Rassam, who was seriously ill, and suffering himself from

<sup>1</sup> *ibid.* pp. 135-6.

<sup>2</sup> Layard, *Nineveh and Babylon*, p. 278.

## SUBSIDIZED EXPLORATION

malaria, he found little encouragement in Baghdad, whence he had intended to start his operations. Rawlinson he had seen off to England some months before, after a characteristic episode when, descending into one of his own trenches at Nimrûd, he found the great man lying wrapped in his travelling cloak and fast asleep, having covered the first stage of his journey to London on his own horse at a speed reminiscent of his earlier feats when a subaltern in India. Furthermore, a characteristic tribal disturbance made travelling south of Baghdad for the time being impossible. He had temporarily to content himself with making ineffectual holes in one of a group of small mounds some four miles beyond the city walls which, strangely enough, have recently yielded buildings and tablets of first-rate importance.<sup>1</sup> Later he contrived to reach Babylon, where he excavated for four weeks without any satisfactory results, and Nippur,<sup>2</sup> where he was no more successful. For, in truth, the patience and skill necessary to trace the remains of crude-brick buildings were beyond the capacity of his temperament and the limitations of his funds, as one may judge from a remark which he subsequently made to Fresnel:

There will be nothing to be hoped for from the site of Babylon except with a parliamentary vote for £25,000, and if ever this sum should be voted, I would solicit the favour of not being charged with its application.<sup>3</sup>

In April 1851 Layard once more turned his face homewards, rich in new honours, but, as he himself said, 'with a heavy heart'. By that time more than a hundred and twenty cases of his Assyrian finds had been sent to Baghdad for examination by Rawlinson before being shipped to England. Two years later he was able at last to submit the total results of his researches to the public in the form of definitive publications,<sup>4</sup> and was belatedly accorded the official recognition which his work had so well merited.

<sup>1</sup> Tell Abu Harmal, called by Layard, Tell Mohammed, now under excavation by the Iraq Government (1945).

<sup>2</sup> Budge, *Rise and Progress of Assyriology*, p. 79, inexplicably remarks that there is no record of Layard ever visiting Nippur (Niffar), yet his excavations there are described in *Nineveh and Babylon*, p. 556.

<sup>3</sup> *Journal Asiatique*, Vol. VI, p. 548.

<sup>4</sup> Layard, *Discoveries in the Ruins of Nineveh and Babylon*, and *The Monuments of Nineveh*, both published in London 1853.



## BOOK III

### *Chapter Ten*

#### SCRAMBLE FOR ANTIQUITIES

THE beginning of the second half of the last century marks an interesting stage in the progress of Mesopotamian exploration. Rawlinson returned in 1851 to a second period of residency in Baghdad as Political Agent, more than ever pre-occupied with archaeology, having by that time published his famous memoir, *On the Babylonian Translation of the Great Persian Inscription at Behistun*, which unequivocally established the fact that the Assyrian-Babylonian language written in the cuneiform script was now capable of translation. Politically he now occupied a unique position in Baghdad. British prestige and the respect in which the Resident was held had scarcely decreased since the time of Rich, and Rawlinson's formidable personality had soon earned him a reputation throughout the Pashalik, which after his departure became legendary. When Budge visited Baghdad in 1888, out of curiosity, he made some enquiries on the subject from an elderly official. After confirming the story of Rawlinson having knocked together the heads of two recalcitrant members of the *majlis*, he concluded:

The Balios Beg<sup>1</sup> lived here for twelve years, and each year his power in the country became stronger. And towards the end of his time here had he taken one dog and put his English hat on his head and sent him to the Sarai, all the people in the bazaar would have made way for him, and bowed to him, and the soldiers would have stood still and presented arms to him as he passed, and the officials in the Sarai would have embraced him; and if he had sent another dog with another of his hats across the river to Kâzimên, the Shi'ites and the Sunnites would have stopped fighting each other and would have asked him to drink coffee with them.<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Budge thought this curious title was a corruption of the Greek *Basileus*. Another equally far-fetched theory derives it from the English 'By-laws'.

<sup>2</sup> Budge, *By Nile and Tigris*, I, p. 232.

## FOUNDATIONS IN THE DUST

Layard, meanwhile, had disappeared permanently from the field and his excavations for the present were closed. The French had in the same year appointed as successor to Botta, the skilful architect and antiquarian Victor Place, and had furnished him with funds for the resumption of excavations at Khorsabad. Other funds had been provided for 'a scientific and artistic expedition to Mesopotamia and Media'. This enterprising but ill-fated attempt to wrest from the mounds of Babylonia treasures such as had already been found in Assyria owed its conception partly to the new interest aroused in Babylonia by Loftus's attempt on the vast ruin-field at Warka.

William Kennett Loftus was geological member of the same Turco-Persian frontier commission to which Layard also had been originally appointed. Finding much time on his hands, and actuated by a 'strong desire to explore a region which from our childhood we have been led to regard as the cradle of the human race', he had already visited the better-known Babylonian ruins, when in the last days of 1849 the Commission was at last ordered to proceed to Mohammerah, the scene of the original international dispute. While the rest of the party sailed from Baghdad in the armed river-boat *Nitocris*, commanded by Captain Felix Jones (the same who in 1846 had made an unsuccessful attempt to fetch Layard's sculptures from Nimrûd), Loftus, and his friend, H. A. Churchill, took the bold step of travelling on horseback diagonally across the desert and marshes of Chaldea from the Euphrates to the lower Tigris. Everywhere they were astonished to find traces of advanced ancient civilization and extensive cultivation existing incongruously amidst the barren heritage of the unruly southern tribes, and were able to take note of now-famous ruins such as Al Muqayyar (Ur), Niffar (Nippur), Warka (Erech) and others which have still not been further investigated, such as Hammâm and Tell Jide. On rejoining his colleagues, the whole of his discoveries made such an impressive story that the head of the Mission, Colonel Williams, eventually agreed to his returning to make small-scale excavations at Warka, presumably with funds from the budget of the Commission. Layard once in a fit of irritation had drawn an unfavourable comparison between the latter and the funds provided by the Treasury

## SCRAMBLE FOR ANTIQUITIES

for his own expedition, considering the potential results of the two undertakings. The new situation must have intrigued him.

Under great difficulties and with inadequate assistance, Loftus accordingly undertook three weeks' excavations at Warka, and two years later, when in the employment of the newly-created Assyrian Excavation Fund, continued the same work for another three months, accompanied by his friends Boutcher, the artist, and Kerr Lynch. At the end of that time he had come to realize something of the colossal task which would face anyone attempting systematic excavations there. Warka, the site of Biblical Erech, home of the mythical Sumerian hero Gilgamesh, is a city occupied continuously for nearly four thousand years, and its ruins, which are nearly six miles in circumference, compare in importance with those of Babylon. There are, for example, at least three *ziggurats* and a gigantic Parthian temple. Hilprecht, at the beginning of this century, estimated that its adequate excavation would require fifty years' digging and a fund of 500,000 dollars.<sup>1</sup> It can at least be said, in support of this theory, that the termination of the German expedition's work in 1939, after fifteen seasons' patient excavation, was not occasioned by having exhausted the possibilities of the site.

What, then, was the result of these first rather superficial diggings, actuated, as Loftus admitted himself, by 'a nervous desire to find important large museum pieces at the least possible outlay of time and money'? He at least discovered the Parthian cemetery, which until quite recently has proved an almost inexhaustible source of glazed 'slipper' coffins. 'After many fruitless trials and the demolition of perhaps a hundred specimens', he found a way of strengthening them with paper and paste, so that a few examples could be removed intact to the river for dispatch to Europe. He partly excavated (though he could neither understand nor date it to within a thousand years) the great Parthian temple. Even more incomprehensible and of an antiquity quite unimaginable at that time was a section of walling, ornamented with the coloured mosaic-work of terra-cotta cones, now a familiar architectural feature associated with the Proto-Sumerian builders of the fourth millennium, for whose technical designation the name of this site is still used. There was

<sup>1</sup> H. V. Hilprecht, *Explorations in Bible Lands*, Edinburgh 1903, p. 152.

## FOUNDATIONS IN THE DUST

little else; a few cuneiform tablets, some of them in 'envelopes', a figurine or two and some decayed copper objects. In the end the party was not sorry to turn its attention to other neighbouring sites—Senkara, Medina and Tell Sifr.

Loftus moved his camp to Senkara, which lies on the banks of the ancient canal, Shatt al Kar, within sight of Warka, and spent a few days in cutting some trenches in the highest part of the mound. His work was at first a good deal interfered with by the nightly attention of a family of lions, who had previously been the only occupants of the ruins. The lioness seemed particularly to resent the barking of the dogs which gave warning of her approach to the camp at night, and accordingly proceeded to remove them. Loftus says:

Gradually their number decreased, until our greatest favourite, Toga, alone remained. One pitch-dark night Toga was more energetic than usual in warning us of our enemies' position; at last, apparently tired of his exertions, he returned sullenly into camp, and lay down close to my tent-ropes, growling audibly. Soon afterwards a sudden rush, followed by two or three bounds, making the very ground tremble like the galloping of horsemen, informed the whole encampment that the dog-devourer was among us. Poor Toga was heard to give one stifled yelp, and all was over with our last guardian; he was carried off and demolished at a meal. . . .

The camp never recovered its composure again that night, and the following day's work was but a sorry one.<sup>1</sup>

Yet, in spite of these and other interruptions of Loftus's work, the results of his investigations enabled Rawlinson, to whom he sent any inscribed material which he discovered, to identify Senkara as the site of the ancient city of Larsa, the 'Ellasar' of the Bible.<sup>2</sup> He was even able to infer that the terraces of kiln-baked brick which his trenches encountered formed part of a temple and *zig-gurat* dedicated to the Sun-god, Shamash. Rapid and haphazard as his excavations had been, the inscriptions which he found were of considerable importance. There were duplicate foundation cylinders

<sup>1</sup> W. K. Loftus, *Travels and Researches in Chaldæa and Susiana*, London 1857, p. 260.

<sup>2</sup> Genesis xiv. i.

## SCRAMBLE FOR ANTIQUITIES

of Nebuchadnezzar II, many inscribed bricks bearing the name of a king of Ur, and one giving for the first time the name of a Kassite king ruling over Babylonia in the mid-second millennium B.C. In addition there were many tablets, terra-cotta plaques and other objects from a group of interesting vaulted tombs. These finds represented a considerable advance on any previous attempt to excavate a Babylonian site.

Of the other two mounds which Loftus 'tried', Medina proved unproductive, but at Tell Sifr he experienced one of those remarkable pieces of luck which occasionally cheer the heart of the least sanguine excavator. Riding over from Senkara with a handful of workmen, he dug straight into the remains of what appeared to be a coppersmith's store, and, after a few days' work, had accumulated 'a large collection of cauldrons, vases, dishes, hammers, hatchets, knives, daggers, fetters, mirrors and other instruments and utensils', in addition to nearly one hundred tablets which dated these objects to Babylonian times. Tell Sifr has since that time received no attention from legitimate excavators, though, like Senkara itself, it has suffered at times from illicit digging. Loftus himself was compelled to terminate his excavations by the overflowing of the Kar and the consequent rapid rise in the level of the marshes, which threatened to cut off his retreat. He consequently loaded himself and his finds on to two 'country-boats' and sailed down the Euphrates to Basrah.

In the meanwhile the three Frenchmen, Fresnel, Oppert, and the artist, Felix Thomas, who had been sent out by their government in 1851 to excavate in Babylonia, had met with even less success than Loftus. Baffled by the seemingly featureless mountains of broken bricks and other debris which they found at Kish and Babylon, they were forced, after two years' work, to return almost empty-handed to Paris, leaving a few cases of the now familiar inscribed bricks and terra-cotta figurines to follow by raft and ship. Even these, as will be seen later, never reached France, for in 1855 they were involved in an accident which sent them to the bottom of the Tigris in company with the greater part of the new consignment of sculpture which Place had been laboriously extracting from his extended excavations at Khorsabad.

## FOUNDATIONS IN THE DUST

In Sargon's palace, two years had sufficed for Place to accomplish the task which he had set himself. The complete plan of the surviving buildings at the summit of the mound had been recovered or conjecturally restored, and may be seen to-day, enhanced by fine draughtsmanship, in his publication. His method of excavating, like that of his predecessors, consisted of tunnelling along the face of the walls and obtaining light by occasional vertical shafts from the surface. Accurate surveying in the underground warren thus created must have been virtually impossible; so one must forgive him if, as more recent work on the palace has shown,<sup>1</sup> the actual remains of the building do not correspond in every detail to his plan. It is equally understandable that to save himself time he should have occasionally assumed in the Assyrian architect a most unoriental passion for symmetry. The only minor fault which is observable in his records is that buildings investigated in other parts of the city have plainly been located on his site-plan quite arbitrarily, and from memory, after returning to Paris.

It will be remembered that, almost simultaneously with Place's arrival at Khorsabad in 1851, Rawlinson had returned to his post as Resident in Baghdad. Layard had by that time decided definitely against taking any further part in Mesopotamian excavations, partly owing to the recurrent fever to which he had become subject, and partly on account of his new orientation towards politics. Rawlinson had accordingly agreed to take charge of British archaeological interests in Baghdad and Mosul, and had at the same time been provided by the trustees with a considerable sum of money for the resumption of excavations. It was clear that his official duties would prevent him from taking personal charge of any work of this kind and his first intention was to detach Loftus from his work in the south and send him to Mosul. This, however, proved unnecessary, since in 1852 the British Museum sent out their usual rather sickly young artist (the third in succession), shortly followed by Hormuzd Rassam. So again the narrative of discovery 'is resumed in the English language, but this time by a native of Mosul'.<sup>2</sup>

Rassam has hitherto appeared in this story as Layard's indefatig-

<sup>1</sup> Excavations by the Oriental Institute of the University of Chicago 1928-35.

<sup>2</sup> H. Rassam, *Asshur and the Land of Nimrod*, New York 1897.

## SCRAMBLE FOR ANTIQUITIES

able helper and reliable adjutant. With the great pioneer's own work and writing setting so high a precedent, that of his pupil and successor perhaps inevitably suffers by comparison. It is in any case certain that once he is operating independently, save for the remote control of Rawlinson in Baghdad, there is something in Rassam's conduct as an explorer which induces a peculiar distaste, and the written account of his adventures falls correspondingly flat. Without laying oneself open to a charge of prejudice, one may perhaps be allowed to suggest that the picture of an Englishman like Layard frustrating by patience and good humour the importunities of oriental malice and bigotry appeals to one more than that of Victor Place who, by all accounts, was an equally conscientious and otherwise sympathetic character, being outwitted by a born Moslâwi in what can only be described as an undignified scramble for archaeological loot. Actually Rassam's accomplishments were considerable. He did, as we shall see, acquire for the British Museum an Assyrian Royal Library and perhaps the finest of all Assyrian relief sequences—the Lion-hunt from the palace of Ashur-bani-pal which would otherwise have fallen to the French. With Mosul as a base, he did, either personally or by proxy, 'examine' mounds 'within an area of nearly two hundred miles'; he did acquire for London the famous bronze gates of Balawât; and he did discover what seemed to be inexhaustible mines of Babylonian tablets at southern sites like Sippar. Yet at times his gangs of workmen were scattered over the countryside in such a way that any kind of adequate supervision was out of the question; the clay documents of the library were grubbed up in fragments from his dark and awkward tunnels at Kuyunjik; no proper plans were made or records kept of the circumstances of his discoveries and, in the case of the bronze gates, a doubt has even subsequently arisen as to whether they really came from Balawât at all.

Returning to Mosul in 1852 as representative of the British Museum, Rassam found the Turkish government itself taking a hand in the now popular process of 'mining' in the ruins of Nineveh. The head of a winged bull had come to light in the *sirdab* of a house in the village of Nabi Yunus, some property had been bought which made space available for small-scale excavations, and gangs of con-

## FOUNDATIONS IN THE DUST

victs from the local gaol had been detailed for the actual work. Digging was continued for some months, but produced little beyond the original bull-colossus, which could not be removed, and an inscribed marble tablet, later known as the 'Nebi Yunus inscription' of Sennacherib. It can be well imagined that holes dug beneath the floors of already rickety houses by workmen 'inexperienced and hampered by heavy chains' were unlikely to fulfil the Turks' very considerable expectations, and the accumulating expense of compensating the residents eventually made it impossible to continue.

Rassam and Hodder meanwhile, having been refused access even to the village of Nebi Yunus while the work was in progress, had turned their attention once more to Kuyunjik; and here from the beginning an embarrassing situation arose in connexion with the rival claims of the French to an important section of the mound. The British Museum's *fîrmân* entitled its agents to excavate without hindrance in all lands which were Crown property, but it chanced that the summit of Kuyunjik was privately owned, and from the first some question had arisen as to the necessity of compensating the landlord. By a curious coincidence, when Layard was in Istanbul in 1849, he had chanced to encounter this gentleman in person at a moment when he was in very serious financial straits, and had seized the opportunity of helping him out of his difficulties, in return for a loose concession in connexion with his property at Nineveh. Bearing in mind the vague prerogative thus acquired by the British Museum, Place, on arrival in Mosul in 1851, had sought Rawlinson's permission to make further soundings in Kuyunjik, and as a result had been generously assigned a large area at the northern end of the mound, which had thus become rigidly divided into national concessions. When, therefore, Rassam reopened excavations in the southern or British area, he found gangs of men employed by the French Consulate already at work to the north. For a time, at Kuyunjik, the line of demarcation carefully worked out by Rawlinson prevented any open dispute. But when efforts were made by both sides simultaneously to restart work on other mounds, where national prerogatives were even more debatable, there was bound to be trouble. Place's agents, working their way surreptitiously towards Nimrûd, found Rassam's men already installed; but at

## SCRAMBLE FOR ANTIQUITIES

Qal'at Sharqât two representative parties converged simultaneously on the mound and an embarrassing scuffle ensued.

So the last months of 1852 and the whole of 1853 passed with Rassam working sporadically at Kuyunjik, Nimrûd and Sharqât, and pecking restlessly at new and less reliable mounds. Six statues of the god Nebo, fragmentary stelas of Shamsi-adad IV and Assurnasir-pal II from a new temple at Nimrûd, and a beautiful white obelisk covered with reliefs and inscriptions from the southern part of Kuyunjik, combined with important inscribed material from Sharqât, would have satisfied most excavators to-day, but compared with the immense accumulation of Layard's finds they did not seem to Rassam anything like an adequate return for the financial outlay. Meanwhile, in the French concession at Nineveh, he had the discomfort of watching Place's workmen rapidly approaching what he considered the most promising spot of the whole mound. In the end, at the risk of 'getting into hot water with Mr. Place', he decided on an experimental examination of it himself at night with the help of a few trustworthy workmen. The result must be told in his own words.

He says:

It was on the night of the 20th of December, 1853, that I commenced to examine the ground in which I was fortunate enough to discover, after three nights' trial, the grand palace of Assur-bani-pal, commonly known by the name of Sardanapalus. When everything was ready I went and marked three places, some distance from each other, in which our operations were to be commenced. Only a few trenches had been opened there in the time of Sir Henry Layard; but on this occasion I ordered the men to dig transversely and cut deeper down. I told them they were to stop work at dawn, and return to the same diggings again the next night. The very first night we worked there, one of the gangs came upon indications of an ancient building; but though we found among the rubbish painted bricks and pieces of marble on which there were signs of inscriptions and bas-reliefs, I did not feel sanguine as to the result.<sup>1</sup>

On the second night, having concentrated the whole of his workmen on this one spot, to his great delight the bottom of a slab was

<sup>1</sup> Rassam, *Asshur and the Land of Nimrod*, p. 24.

## FOUNDATIONS IN THE DUST

found in position, on which were recognizable the feet of Assyrian soldiers and captives. Rassam at once sent off a dispatch to the British Museum claiming to have found a new palace, and was consequently much perturbed to discover later that his slab was not part of a continuous wall but isolated in a mass of debris. As he says:

This put a damper on my spirits as I had on that day reported both to the British Museum authorities and to Sir Henry Rawlinson the discovery of what I considered to be a new palace, as I was then fully convinced of its being so. I knew, also, that if I failed to realize my expectations, I should only be found fault with and laughed at for my unrewarded zeal. However, I felt that as I had commenced, so I must go on, even if only to be disappointed. The next night I superintended the work in person, and increased the number of men, placing them in separate gangs around the area, which seemed the most likely place for good results. The remnant of the sculptured wall discovered was on a low level, running upwards, and this fact alone was enough to convince an experienced eye that the part of the building I had hit upon was an ascending passage leading to the main building: . . . my instinct did not deceive me; for one division of the workmen, after three or four hours' hard labour, were rewarded by the first grand discovery of a beautiful bas-relief in a perfect state of preservation, representing the king, who was afterwards identified as Assur-bani-pal, standing in a chariot, about to start on a hunting expedition, and his attendants handing him the necessary weapons for the chase. More than half of the upper part of the sculpture came into sight in an instant, as it happened that while the men were busily engaged in digging a deep trench inside what was afterwards found to be a long, narrow saloon, a large part of the bank which was attached to the sculpture fell, and exposed to view that enchanting spectacle.

The discovery could now, of course, no longer be concealed, and soon, as may be imagined, brought Place riding over in great haste from Khorsabad. His reaction to the obvious infringement of a 'gentleman's agreement' was on this occasion really beyond praise, and even Rassam has to record with some surprise that Place seemed inclined to acquiesce in the *fait accompli*, 'and before we parted he congratulated me on my good fortune'. But he adds in a footnote:

The loss of this prize had such a bad effect on M. Place's mind that in

## SCRAMBLE FOR ANTIQUITIES

the work he published in 1866-9 of his researches, entitled *Ninive et L'Assyrie*, he quite ignored the fact of my discoveries, but made it appear that Mr. Loftus, and even his artist, Mr. Boucher, were the successful explorers.

It was now necessary to clear the great 'lion-hunt' gallery and follow the wall-faces through its doorways into the adjoining room of the palace, so examining its plan and contents. If ever there was an archaeological occasion which called for leisurely and methodical work, this was it. The chambers proved to have had the function of a library as well as a picture gallery, so that a wide area of floor in the centre was stacked high with a great mass of priceless tablets, among which, as it proved, was the Assyrian account of the Deluge and 'Noah's Ark'. Built into a section of wall which Rassam unintentionally demolished was a tall terra-cotta prism covered with inscriptions. This, of course, 'crumbled to pieces when exposed to the air', but, as though Ashur-bani-pal had foreseen the necessity for making his own immortalization as nearly as possible foolproof, a second duplicate prism was installed nearby and this was miraculously rescued intact. It contained the annals of the King's reign. From all points of view the building proved a precious storehouse of historical documents and works of art, and would have justified any expenditure of time and money. Yet Rassam was short of both. Owing to Place's admirable restraint, the palace could be explored without the embarrassment of conflicting claims to its contents. But, as Gadd admits in a most impartial discussion of the episode,<sup>1</sup> in all other respects the discovery was positively 'inopportune'. He says:

In general, its [the palace's] excavation was conducted in a hurried and unobservant manner, without any such record as Layard had kept; little but sculptures and tablets was preserved, and there was no adequate planning. These were the faults of inexperience, universal at the time; and it must be added that the absence of any European supervisor from the work was a very serious handicap. But they were not the only disadvantages. This immense discovery was made but a month or two before the expedition, for want of funds, must come to an end. Rawlinson was detained by pressing official business in Baghdad, and could pay only a flying visit

<sup>1</sup> Gadd, *Stones of Assyria*, pp. 99-100.

## FOUNDATIONS IN THE DUST

to Mosul to view the new wonders. Deeply impressed by what he saw, he could only select a number of slabs to be packed for the British Museum, lament that the treasure had not appeared a year earlier, and try to formulate plans for getting Loftus and Boutcher to abandon the south, and carry on at Kuyunjik when the time came, in March, for Rassam to leave. Yet another misfortune was that Hodder, whose services would never have been so precious, was now completely incapacitated by an intestinal malady, and could do no more drawing. . . .

In April 1853 Rassam packed up and returned to London. Some months later he accepted a political appointment in Aden and temporarily abandoned antiquity-hunting.

Rawlinson now succeeded in his plan to detach Loftus from his not over-productive work in Babylonia. The Assyrian Excavation Fund, by which his excavations were financed, was an organization recently instituted by a group of private individuals, interested as connoisseurs or in other capacities in the acquisition of Mesopotamian antiquities, and its representatives from the first seemed doomed to find themselves in an undesirably competitive relationship with those of the British Museum. Furthermore, its commercial appearance could not but be misunderstood when it was known, for instance, that Boutcher was directly employed by a firm of Bond Street art dealers. It is hardly surprising, therefore, that when Loftus first arrived at Kuyunjik after Rassam's departure, friction was inevitable between rival gangs of workmen employed by two separate institutions. Soon, however, the position was regularized by the transfer of the Fund's remaining resources and the direction of its representatives to Rawlinson, so that Loftus and Boutcher were able to continue Rassam's work at least for a few short months until recalled by the British Museum.

From the whole of the above account it will be possible to gather that the beautiful and famous palace of Ashur-bani-pal at Nineveh never was and, in spite of some subsequent work on its site, never has been properly and completely excavated. Added to this, many of its sculptures were lost completely, leaving neither trace nor record in the transport mishap of 1855. The loss occasioned by this disaster,<sup>1</sup> which took place near the head of the Shatt al 'Arab at

<sup>1</sup> cf. Victor Place, *Nineve et L'Assyrie*, p. 142.

## SCRAMBLE FOR ANTIQUITIES

Kurnah, was literally immense. The 'country-boats' and rafts which were waylaid by Arab brigands and maliciously capsized owing to the disappointing character of their freight,<sup>1</sup> were carrying not only the entire results of the French Babylonian expedition and a hundred and twenty cases of Khorsabad material, but eighty cases destined for the Prussian Government, and sixty-eight further cases of sculpture from Ashur-bani-pal's palace, which Rawlinson had allowed Place to select for the Louvre. In the case of the Khorsabad material, the reliefs had fortunately already been meticulously drawn and recorded by Felix Thomas (who had providentially offered his services to Place when the work at Babylon proved unproductive) and could subsequently be published in a new folio as lavish as that already produced by Botta.<sup>2</sup> Boutcher's drawings of the lost Kuyunjik slabs, however, were themselves lost in England before being adequately published,<sup>3</sup> a fitting end to the whole unedifying scramble.

The loss of three hundred odd cases of antiquities at Kurnah was only one of several mishaps to the Assyrian sculptures on their journey down the Tigris. On another occasion two of Rassam's rafts, reaching a point on the lower Tigris where the spring floods had broken through the enclosing dyke and the water was pouring through into a great desert lake, one of them was swept through the gap and eventually ran aground nearly a mile from the river-bank. The situation was only saved by the courage and ingenuity of Captain Felix Jones, who arriving at the scene in the *Nitocris*, took his craft boldly through the gap in pursuit and succeeded with much difficulty in rescuing the sculptures.

Captain Jones himself at this point merits a considerable digression, particularly in view of the very considerable topographical contributions which he made to Mesopotamian archaeology during the years which we have just been chronicling. In 1846 he had set out to chart the course of the Tigris from Baghdad northwards, and

<sup>1</sup> This is what occurred according to Place's own account. Budge's version in *By Nile and Tigris*, Vol. I, p. 170, is apparently erroneous, as also is the date.

<sup>2</sup> Victor Place, *Ninive et L'Assyrie*.

<sup>3</sup> Gadd, *Stones of Assyria*, p. 101.

## FOUNDATIONS IN THE DUST

though on reaching Tekrît the power of his engines proved unequal to any further navigation, he had by then already acquired the most valuable information.

His next enterprise, undertaken two years later, carried him further afield into a region hardly less remote to-day than a century ago. His own careful account of it, which was subsequently buried, like all his other reports, in the Records of the Bombay Government,<sup>1</sup> was entitled 'Narrative of a Journey undertaken in April 1848, by Commander J. F. Jones, Indian Navy, for the purpose of determining the tract of the Ancient Nahr Awân Canal; accompanied by Preliminary Remarks on the Canal, with a glance at the past History of the Territory of the Nahr Awân'.

One of the most famous of Iraq's ancient waterways, Nahr Awân has always had a special appeal to the imagination as a 'lost river'. Bringing under cultivation, as it did up to the fourteenth century A.D., a vast area of land to the east of the Tigris, it left the parent Tigris a little below Tekrît and, flowing far out into the eastern alluvium, rejoined it nearly two hundred miles further south near Kût al 'Imâra. To-day it is a dry bed, partly filled with drifting sand and its farms and ploughlands are *chôl*-desert visited only in the spring by the Bedouins with their flocks. Its upper reach from Daur to Baqubah is known as the Qatl al Kisru or 'Chosroes Cut', being attributed like so many other remnants of ancient engineering feats to the great Persian conqueror. When in the ninth century the 'Abbasid caliphs built Sâmarra, and the land between Chosroes Cut and the Tigris came to be covered with palaces and gardens, Al Mutawakkil attempted to reopen its channel; but after spending several hundred thousand *dirhams* his engineers had to abandon the attempt. Up to Baqubah the Nahr Awân was in the true sense a canal, constructed scientifically with its controlling weirs and affluents, but at this point it received the waters of the Diyalah river and the whole flowed out eastwards into the plain to find its own course to Kût. As a result the southernmost part has no spoilbanks, and has the appearance merely of a huge dry river bed. But it can easily be

<sup>1</sup> Reprinted in 1857 in the form of *Selections from the Records of the Bombay Government*, No. XLIII, New Series. *Memoirs by Commander James Felix Jones, I.N.*

## SCRAMBLE FOR ANTIQUITIES

traced and takes much the same line as the railway constructed in 1942 by British engineers as a link in the eastern transport route for American aid to Russia. Where in the old days one would have sailed down the Nahr Awân in a ship, as did the medieval Arab geographers,<sup>1</sup> observing the prosperous cities and gardens on its banks, to-day one may drive along its bed in a car and endeavour to follow Felix Jones' identification of some of the forlorn ruin-fields which mark its course.

Next after Baqubah comes the bridge-town, Jisr Nahr Awân, where the Baghdad-Khorasân road spanned its waters. Somewhere about here a smaller canal branched off along the present line of the lower Diyalah, to water the orchards and vegetable gardens east of Baghdad and rejoin the Tigris below the city. The next bridge was called Burar, after the wife of the Caliph Al Ma'mûn. Below this was the city of Abarta with its famous Persian markets, and here the ruins of a great brick tower still form an eerie landmark in the otherwise empty desert. Sixty miles onward, as far as Madharayah, near Kût, where the Nahr Awân finally rejoined the Tigris, one can identify city after city, and observe scanty remains of a once-prosperous agricultural province. If we are to believe Ya'qût, it was the Seljuk Sultans of the twelfth and thirteenth centuries whose neglect of the canal wasted the district. He records their omission to dredge and repair the dykes, and adds:

Further their armies had made a roadway of this same canal whereby both district and canal have now gone to ruin.

Felix Jones plotted the whole course of the Nahr Awân most carefully, and has left a curious hand-coloured map<sup>2</sup> which to-day is still frequently consulted by irrigation engineers.

In 1852, the Captain reappears actually in the employ of the British Museum. We are told that, 'yielding to a general desire of seeing a complete picture of Assyria in her present desolation', the British Museum officially commissioned him to undertake a survey of the country between the Tigris and the greater Zab, already partially mapped by Rich earlier in the century. He was assisted on

<sup>1</sup> cf. Ya'qûbi, Ya'qût, Ibn Serapion, etc.

<sup>2</sup> Appended to the *Memoirs* of 1857.

## FOUNDATIONS IN THE DUST

this occasion by a Dr. Hyslop, who had become doctor to the Baghdad Residency on the death of Dr. Ross, and who was perhaps more interested in flora than antiquities. The result was a most admirable map (published as a supplement to the work of the Chesney Expedition)<sup>1</sup> which remains to-day the principal authority for the geography of Assyria. In presenting it, Jones paid the following remarkable tribute to Rich:

His survey of [Nineveh and Nimrûd] will be found as correct as the most diligent enthusiast can desire; indeed, were it not for the renewed enquiry into Assyrian subjects, the present survey we have the honour of submitting to the public might have been dispensed with, for its value chiefly consists in corroborating the fidelity of his positions, and otherwise, though quite unnecessary, stamping his narrative with the broad seal of truth.

Other enterprises which are meticulously recorded in the captain's *Memoir* included 'Researches in the Vicinity of the Medean Wall of Xenophon, and along the Old Course of the River Tigris; and Discovery of the site of the Ancient Opis', also illustrated by a map and a number of almost incomprehensible engravings crudely ornamented in water-colours; 'A Journey to the Frontier of Turkey and Persia through a part of Kurdistan; undertaken in company with Major (now Lieutenant-Colonel) Henry Creswicke Rawlinson, K.C.B., late Political Agent in Turkish Arabia', and a 'Plan of the enceinte of Baghdad' with a commentary on the province. The latter is ornamented with more crude engravings, including views of the contemporary British Residency, which appears to have been located on the left bank at a point a little south of the present King Feisal Bridge.

After presenting the Honorable East India Company with the last of these notes for their records, Felix Jones was offered and accepted the post of British Agent in Bushire, where certain of his surviving relatives still live to-day.

In 1855 the Crimean War temporarily put a stop to all middle-Eastern exploration. By this time the British Museum was confessing

<sup>1</sup> L. Chesney, *Expedition for the Survey of the Euphrates and Tigris* (maps).

## SCRAMBLE FOR ANTIQUITIES

to inadequate exhibition-space and an 'Assyrian Room' was arranged in the newly-named Crystal Palace on Sydenham Hill. At Nineveh and Nimrûd, distributions of sculptures had been made by Rawlinson, before finally leaving the country, to other museums in Europe and also for the first time to America. When Bouvet, who had succeeded Place as French consul at Mosul, asked for money to continue excavations, 'Non, répondit le Ministre, les fouilles sont finies, on a trop dépensé'.

For almost a score of years no authorized excavations took place; yet at Nimrûd the sound of pick and shovel were still not infrequently heard. All pretence of historical research had now been abandoned, and the place of the archaeologists had been taken by commercial speculators. In this way during the eighteen-sixties at least two consignments of sculpture were dispatched to Europe by Baghdad merchants.

## *Chapter Eleven*

### SMITH AND RASSAM

IN 1872 Western interest in Mesopotamia seemed suddenly to revive, and subsidized excavations began once more to be considered. George Smith, the British Museum copyist, was first in the field, on the trail of a missing fragment of the now famous 'Deluge Tablet'. Then came an ageing but still indefatigable Hormuzd Rassam. The French consul, de Sarzec, working for the Louvre in 1877, made the first of his astonishing discoveries at Telloh, and soon afterwards the first American expedition started work at Nippur.

Yet during this last quarter of the nineteenth century there were signs of at least two new developments in the character of archaeological research. In the first place both French and Americans elected to apply themselves to the prolonged excavation of a single site. The funds with which they were provided were in both cases adequate and their work, after a disastrous false start in the case of Nippur, was comparatively leisured and deliberate; so at least it seemed probable that the hectic scramble of the earlier days would not be repeated. Admittedly Rassam, as 'Supervisor of Excavations' for the British Museum, continued to flit about the country depositing gangs of workmen to dig tunnels in widely separated mounds, and either removing them when they failed at once to find large and obvious antiquities, or leaving them unsupervised for periods of up to a year. But this policy was at last beginning to be frowned upon, even by the Turks. The second new development was a reorientation of interest towards Babylonia, now considered to have been the cradle of the culture which had blossomed with such magnificence and ostentation in Assyria.

While the first systematic excavations of Babylonian cities were in progress and the last of the Assyrian inscriptions were being deciphered and published by the museums of Europe, historians gradually became aware of a more remote and shadowy race, who had

taken possession of the Plain of Shīnar in an earlier age, and from whom, it now seemed, the Assyrian and Babylonian civilizations had themselves originally been derived. These were the Sumerians, a people whose very existence was not suspected until the re-copyings of some of their literature by Assyrian scribes began rather disconcertingly to appear amongst the tablets from Kuyunjik—re-copyings which themselves had been made fifteen hundred years after the disappearance of Sumer as a political entity. Fortunately among these documents there were also bilingual texts and syllabaries which sufficed to identify the language as non-Semitic and pre-Babylonian. The very small collection of bricks, tablets, and seals obtained at various times by the British Museum, whose archaic inscriptions appeared to correspond to this earliest known form of speech, were consequently at once invested with a new interest. By now the earliest royal title of Babylonia, 'King of Sumer and Akkad' was already familiar, and, since the Akkadians had been recognized as the first Semitic arrivals in Mesopotamia, the new non-Semitic language came rightly to be called Sumerian.

The Sumerians, as we now know, were already established in southern Mesopotamia at the beginning of the third millenium B.C. At that time they occupied a number of walled cities, mostly situated on the various branches of the lower Euphrates. Each city had its villages and farms grouped around it to form a city-state, and each of these states was ruled by an *ishakku* or governing prince. There was perpetual rivalry between them and quarrels, usually about irrigation water, often resulted in small-scale wars. One state would as a rule emerge victorious from all its battles and for the time being exercise a sort of loose hegemony over the remainder, and as senior state its *ishakku* would assume the traditional title, 'King of Sumer and Akkad', and the curious designation 'Shepherd of the Black-headed People'. In this way the cities of Uruk, Ur, Kish, Lagash and many others successively provided dynasties of kings to rule with varying successes over the whole of Mesopotamia.

Amongst the authentic Sumerian relics, which in 1869 enabled Oppert definitely to postulate the existence of a non-Semitic pre-Babylonian people, were inscriptions which derived from actual excavations, which had already taken place on the sites of at least

## FOUNDATIONS IN THE DUST

two of the above-named cities. As early as 1854 we have already seen Loftus at Warka, the site of Sumerian Uruk, puzzling over the traces which he found of a then unimaginably ancient civilization. While he was so employed, Rawlinson also arranged with J. E. Taylor, the British Vice-Consul at Basrah, to make some soundings in Tell Muqayyar near Nâsiriyah. Muqayyar even in those days possessed the most completely exposed and best-preserved *ziggurat* staged-tower of any Babylonian site, into which Taylor proceeded in the manner of the time to cut a tunnel. Having satisfied himself that it was entirely constructed of solid brickwork, he almost by chance discovered an inscribed cylinder built into the masonry at one corner, and rightly concluded that duplicate cylinders would be found in corresponding positions at the remaining corners. This enabled Rawlinson to identify the site as Ur-of-the-Chaldees, the Biblical home of the Patriarch, Abraham, and seat of one of the earliest Sumerian dynasties. Two further Sumerian cities were identified in this way, both as it has since proved, religious centres with little, if any political history. First a group of mounds far out in the desert to the south of Ur were investigated by Taylor and proved to be the Biblical Eridu. Secondly, in Birs Nimrod, the ruin west of Babylon most often considered by early travellers to be the Tower of Babel, Rawlinson himself had discovered foundation cylinders showing it to be the ancient Borsippa.

But now, twenty years later, the Sumerian city of Lagash was to be the first southern mound selected for prolonged and methodical excavation. It is no exaggeration to say that one of de Sarzec's major accomplishments during the first months after its discovery was in protecting it from the attentions of Rassam and his gangs of treasure-seekers. To understand this it is necessary first to examine the general trend of archaeological activity sanctioned and subsidized by the British Museum after its sudden renewal of interest in Mesopotamia in 1872. For this purpose further mention must be made of George Smith.

It has not been possible in this story to make individual reference to the many names of scholars who contributed to the development of Assyriology. Yet that of George Smith cannot be omitted, if only because he was the first to meet his death in the field. Originally

apprenticed to a firm of banknote-engravers, he devoted every minute of his spare time to reading about the Assyrian excavations, and his dinner-hours to studying the sculptures and inscriptions exhibited in the British Museum. His absorption in the subject eventually drew the attention of an official of the museum, who succeeded in obtaining for him a minor post in the Assyrian department. There he soon developed a peculiar genius for decipherment and was allotted the task of sorting and 'joining' the broken tablets from the Ninevite libraries. It was while engaged on this work that he made his sensational discovery. His first care had been to classify the fragments roughly according to what appeared to be their subjects, and in this way he had put aside a fairly large pile labelled 'Legends and Mythology'. He says:

Commencing a steady search among these fragments, I soon found half of a curious tablet which had evidently contained originally six columns. . . . On looking down the third column, my eye caught the statement that the ship rested on the mountains of Nizir, followed by the account of the sending forth of the dove, and its finding no resting-place and returning. I saw at once that I had here discovered a portion at least of the Chaldean account of the Deluge.<sup>1</sup>

On 3 December 1872 Smith read a paper on his discovery before the Society of Biblical Archaeology and, as can be imagined, it created a very considerable sensation. He had by then discovered further fragments of the original document, and, by combining with them the equally fragmentary remains of a duplicate text, had succeeded in completing a large section of the story. But there was still a most tantalizing gap. As soon as his discovery was authenticated, the London *Daily Telegraph*, gauging the extent of public interest, offered a sum of £1,000 to equip an expedition to Nineveh for the purpose of finding the missing fragment, providing only that George Smith himself would take charge of the investigation and send occasional accounts of his work. Smith, of course, showed no reluctance to do so, and left England for Mosul in January 1873. Owing to difficulties in obtaining a *firmân* from the Porte, it was not until early May that he was able to begin work at Kuyunjik.

<sup>1</sup> Campbell Thompson, *A Century of Exploration at Nineveh*, p. 49.

## FOUNDATIONS IN THE DUST

But by an astonishing piece of luck, he accomplished almost at once the primary purpose for which he had been sent out. He trenched through the debris thrown out by the previous excavators (there was no lack of scattered tablets) and he himself again relates how on the evening of the fifth day

I sat down to examine the store of fragments of cuneiform inscriptions from the day's digging, taking out and brushing off the earth from the fragments to read their contents. On cleaning one of them I found to my surprise and gratification that it contained the greater portion of the seventeen lines of inscription belonging to the first column of the Chaldean account of the Deluge, and fitting into the only place where there was a serious blank in the story.<sup>1</sup>

In spite of this prompt reward for its initial generosity, the *Telegraph* showed no inclination to pay for the continuation of the excavations, and Smith consequently returned almost immediately to London. During the next few years the museum sent him twice more to dig at Nineveh, but the days of large-scale discoveries at Kuyunjik were over, and Turkish interference in the activities of foreign excavators were on the increase. Writing of Smith, Budge insists that the repeated delays and obstruction which invariably resulted from his contacts with the local government were the result of his naïve directness and inexperience in the most elementary forms of oriental 'graft'. Be this as it may, they did eventually prove disastrous. Having waited in Istanbul from October 1875 until March 1876 for a third permit to excavate, he eventually reached Mosul too late to begin work, and having decided to return to London, set out, contrary to everyone's advice, to make the cross-desert journey to the Mediterranean in the early summer-heat. He was taken ill with dysentery on the way and died in Aleppo.

It was now necessary for the British Museum to find somebody to take Smith's place in the field, and the first person who suggested himself was Rassam. Rassam had now resigned his political appointment in Aden, after a number of adventures which included the peculiar experience of being temporarily held prisoner by King Theodore of Abyssinia, and had returned to London. Partly as a

<sup>1</sup> *ibid.* p. 52.

result of having been absent from England almost continuously since his discovery of the Palace of Ashur-bani-pal, he had up to now received remarkably little credit for his part in the Assyrian excavations. As he remarks rather plaintively himself:

The consequence was, that not many years afterwards some of my acquisitions were attributed to others, and, actually the Assyrian legends of the Creation and Deluge tablets, which I found in Nineveh, in Assur-bani-pal's palace in 1853, were credited to Mr. George Smith's exploration, which he undertook for the proprietors of the *Daily Telegraph* twenty years afterwards, because, forsooth, he was the first Assyrian scholar who had deciphered them.<sup>1</sup>

Even the discovery of the Lion-hunt was usually attributed to Rawlinson. Nevertheless in 1876 when the Trustees again approached him to undertake the supervision of their continued excavations at Nineveh, he welcomed the opportunity of returning once more to Mosul, and it must be said in his favour that, in return for a free hand in the conduct of the work, he renounced any kind of salary.

Like Smith, Rassam was held up a long while in Istanbul attempting to obtain a *firmân*, but here in the end a great piece of good fortune awaited him. Early in 1877 Sir Henry Layard was made British Ambassador to the Porte.

Layard's political career on which we last saw him embarking in 1852 had in some ways been almost as remarkable as his Assyrian discoveries. Early in that same year we read that

On a vacancy occurring in the office of Under Secretary of State for Foreign Affairs, Earl Granville . . . offered the post to Mr. Layard. This offer created some surprise in political circles, Layard never having been in Parliament; but the departure from the usual custom was received with satisfaction in the country generally.<sup>2</sup>

After holding this post for a few months, however, the Government fell, and Layard, turning his attention to the Commons, was returned as Liberal member for Aylesbury. Afterwards for a time he became Chief Commissioner of Works, and eventually in 1869,

<sup>1</sup> Rassam, *Asshur and the Land of Nimrod*, Preface.

<sup>2</sup> Layard, *Autobiography and Letters*, Vol. II, p. 238.

## FOUNDATIONS IN THE DUST

returning to the Foreign Office, he was appointed Her Majesty's Minister Plenipotentiary at the Court of Madrid. (In a contemporary number of *Punch* there is a humorous picture of him in diplomatic uniform riding into the Spanish arena on a stout and smiling Assyrian winged bull.)<sup>1</sup> In 1877, as we have said, he was knighted and sent in a similar capacity to the seat of the Ottoman Government.

With Layard to intercede for him Rassam obtained a concession which must have exceeded his most sanguine hopes. It authorized him to excavate almost unconditionally on all Crown-lands in the Pashaliks of Baghdad, Aleppo (which included Mosul) and Van in eastern Anatolia, and permitted him to retain all his finds with the exception of duplicates. He reached Mosul early in 1878 and began the first of a series of excavating campaigns, which lasted until 1882.

Rassam's instructions from the Trustees were perfectly well defined. He was to concentrate on the mounds of Nineveh with the purpose of augmenting the Museum's collection of tablets from the library of Ashur-bani-pal. But being, in his own words, disinclined to restrict himself to 'this tame undertaking', he determined to use his own judgement. 'Although', he says, 'that was the first object of my mission, I was, nevertheless, more eager to discover some new ancient sites . . . and to bring to light some important Assyrian monument.'<sup>2</sup> The way he went about it was characteristic. Hilprecht says:

Owing to the large geographical area included in his permit, it was impossible for him to superintend all the excavations in person. As a rule he directed them only from the distance, sometimes not visiting the same ruin for weeks and months, and in a few cases even for a whole year. During his absence from Iraq the British Resident at Baghdad undertook a general control of his excavations in Babylonia, while at Mosul his nephew, Nimrūd Rassam acted most of the time as his agent in connexion with the operations conducted on several Assyrian sites. A number of intelligent native overseers . . . carried on the work as well as they could and as far as possible in accordance with their master's instructions. One can easily imagine how unsatisfactory such an arrangement must prove

<sup>1</sup> *ibid.* p. 263.

<sup>2</sup> Rassam, *Asshur and the Land of Nimrod*, p. 200.

in the end, as diametrically opposed to all sound principles of strict scientific investigation, and in part as contrary to the very explicit instructions received from the British Museum. It was the old system of pillage in a new and enlarged edition.<sup>1</sup>

This criticism is understandable from one who had himself concentrated for many years on the patient and methodical excavation of a single Babylonian site. And although, more recently, any American reflection on the methods employed by Layard and other British pioneers always met with a storm of dignified protest from their successors at the British Museum,<sup>2</sup> in the case of Rassam, it will presently be seen to have been completely justified.

Nevertheless, from the Museum's point of view there is no doubt that Rassam did most effectively 'deliver the goods'. Within a few weeks of his arrival at Mosul in 1878 he made another sensational discovery. About a year before returning to the East he had received in London (through the good offices of an interpreter in the French consulate at Mosul) fragments of two bronze plates ornamented in relief with Assyrian figures and decoration. Once he had reopened excavations at Kuyunjik and Nimrûd, his first concern was to discover where these plates came from, and this presented no difficulty. Their place of origin was a small mound called Tell Balawât, about fifteen miles east of Mosul, and they had been found by a peasant from the nearby village of Balawât while engaged in digging a grave on the mound. When Rassam visited the site, this was easily explained, as almost the whole top surface of the mound was covered by a graveyard. Even his *fîrmân* prohibited him from disturbing graves, yet in this case he felt the prospect of an important find to be 'well worth the risk of getting into hot water with the authorities, and even with the village'. The term 'hot water' was an under-estimation of the difficulties which he encountered when he began to dig.

The inhabitants of the village were 'Shebeks', members of one of the several non-Moslem minorities within the Mosul area, but this fact did not in any way diminish their religious susceptibility.

<sup>1</sup> Hilprecht, *Explorations in Bible Lands*, p. 205.

<sup>2</sup> cf. Budge's castigation of James Henry Breasted, *Rise and Progress of Assyriology*, p. 143-4.

## FOUNDATIONS IN THE DUST

Exercising the greatest tact and caution Rassam selected the most respected religious notables of the village to supervise the proceedings, and went to work in a part of the mound which was free of graves. Within a few hours he encountered more copper plates like the ones he had received in London, and ascertained to his great delight that the enormous object of which they formed a part was located outside the limits of the cemetery. Three days' work sufficed for Rassam to clear a large part of it and obtain some idea of the extraordinary character of his find.

He says:

The monument was very much corroded and injured from the length of time it had been lying in damp soil. As soon as the relic was exposed to the air it began to crack, and I had very great difficulty to remove it entire. It was lying on its face and spread like a gigantic hat-rack with the top part rising to within four feet of the ground, and the lower part gradually descending to about fifteen feet deep. The plates seemed to have belonged to the covering, of a monument, which proved to be a huge gate with double leaves. . . . Each leaf had seven panels eight feet long; and, according to the way they were lying, it appeared as if they were used to cover the wooden frame in the shape of belts . . . each leaf had a thick bronze pivot, which is shown by the bend at the end of the panels in the shape of a scroll. These revolved in hard stone sockets, that were found still standing in their former position. . . . The plates, which are embossed with a variety of subjects, such as battle scenes, triumphal processions, and religious performances, are divided into two panels surrounded by a border of rosettes.<sup>1</sup>

These were the Bronze Gates of Shalmaneser II, which are now one of the choicest exhibits in the British Museum.

All went well in Rassam's relations with the villagers as long as he himself was present. But on the fourth day, which was Sunday, he found it necessary to return to Mosul, leaving his foreman in charge. As he explains himself rather naïvely:

I had about five hundred men working in the old trenches at Kuyunjik and Nimrûd, and I was obliged, therefore, to give fresh directions to the overseers at short intervals to prevent waste of time and labour.

<sup>1</sup> Rassam, *Asshur and the Land of Nimrod*, pp. 207-8.

In his absence, fighting broke out between his Arab workmen and the Shebeks, and on the Monday he was compelled, although suffering acutely from sciatica, to ride back to Balawât in a heavy snow-storm. He found the Shebeks all on strike; but the Arabs, who were still at work, had discovered 'a scientifically built Assyrian well', which greatly interested them.<sup>1</sup> He was also relieved to find that the gates themselves, which he had covered with a sprinkling of earth before leaving, had suffered no damage on the previous day.

With an ingenious combination of tact and persuasive humour, which would have been impossible for anyone not locally born, and a liberal distribution of small presents, Rassam coaxed the Shebeks into an improved frame of mind, assuring them that any extension of his excavations would be made by tunnelling deep beneath the graves, and that if necessary arches of masonry would be built to prevent their falling in. Eventually they returned to work, and, with occasional quarrels and other interruptions, the digging was continued. Sixty feet to the north-west of the first gates, Rassam encountered

another copper monument half the size of the first; but instead of the plates being ornamented like those of the former with double rows of figures, they had only one set on each, and the representations were larger.

In the case of this second pair of gates he was relieved of the responsibility of their removal, for

they were found very much injured and as soon as they were exposed to the air, they crumbled to pieces. . . .

Rassam next gives an explanation of the respective setting of the gates, which, as will be seen later, is doubly important, not only because he made no adequate plan and published no other information on the subject, but because of the doubt which was subsequently thrown on the whole circumstance of the find. He says:

In front of each of these monuments there was a T-shaped marble platform, with a brick border constructed so coarsely that it looked more like the work of the Sassanians than that of the Assyrians. . . . The monument stood in front of the narrowest part, and on a level with it;

<sup>1</sup> *ibid.* p. 210 (a folio reference),

## FOUNDATIONS IN THE DUST

the sockets being fixed at each corner so that when the two leaves were opened they rested against the sides of the narrow ledge, as far as the widest part.

This is an impossibly confusing description, but sufficient to show that the doors had stood in some sort of architectural setting. He then continues:

Some Assyrian scholars have supposed that these relics were the gates of a temple, but I am of a contrary opinion, and consider them to have been mere monuments set up on the mound of Balawat in commemoration of certain events. In the place where they were discovered no trace of any wall or building was found;<sup>1</sup> and, considering that the trophy itself must have stood at least twenty-four feet high, the huge building could not have vanished without leaving a trace even of its foundations. Moreover, when we consider that the other monument which was fixed parallel with it, about sixty feet apart, was not half its size, it would have looked unsightly whether in the same building or separately. Within the same distance, and forming almost a square with these two platforms, I found two others which must have had other monuments in front of them, but no trace of them was seen.

In another part of the mound Rassam's men came upon a marble coffer containing two beautifully inscribed tablets hewn of the same material.<sup>2</sup> After further digging they found that this coffer

was placed at the entrance of a room which had been burnt down and proved afterwards to have been a temple. At the northwest of this chamber there was an altar ascended by five steps, on which we found an inscribed marble tablet of the same size and shape as the other two which were found in the coffer.

All these antiquities, including even the marble coffer, Rassam succeeded, with the help of a large cart, in transporting safely to Mosul, and so eventually to England. But unfortunately fighting had broken out anew among the workmen, and, being disinclined to be the cause of further bloodshed, after clearing out the temple, he closed the excavations and himself returned to Mosul.

<sup>1</sup> This was not surprising, since Rassam was rarely capable of recognizing sun-dried brickwork.

<sup>2</sup> These tablets gave the ancient name of Balawât as Imgur-Bel.

As has already been said, Rassam made no adequate plan or drawings of the layout of the site or the relative positions of his discoveries. Yet his rather full description of the work and its difficulties, of which the foregoing account is an abbreviation, creates for one a clear enough picture of the mound and village of Balawât. The next reference to it in archaeological literature is therefore all the more surprising. This is by Budge, who visited the site with Nimrûd Rassam in 1890, long after the gates had been exhibited, published and generally become famous. He bluntly asserts that 'none of the natives had ever heard of the discovery of the bronze plates', and adds that: 'Mr. Rassam questioned them closely, and was convinced that someone had made a mistake.'<sup>1</sup> In his book *By Nile and Tigris*, he amplifies this by saying:

If the two sets of gates were found at Tell Balawat there must have been a palace at this place, but this is impossible for there is no room in the mound for a temple still less for a temple and a palace however small. An explanation of the difficulty is hard to find, but it seems very probable that the natives deceived Mr. H. Rassam and did not tell him where they found the plates which were sent to Paris. Mr. H. Rassam may have obtained from Tell Balawat the plates and the coffer, etc., which he sent home, but if he did the natives must have taken them there.

However extraordinary this contention may seem, it is a fact that the British Museum authorities still consider the provenance of the gates to be in doubt. It may therefore be of some interest to mention a visit which the writer made to Balawât in 1942 in the course of departmental duties.

The mound is about three hundred yards in diameter and two-thirds of the summit is occupied by graves. In the unoccupied space and among the outlying graves are the remains of Rassam's trenches and collapsed tunnels, perfectly matching the dimensions and dispositions which are mentioned in his account. At another point near the edge of the mound, his 'Assyrian well' is still exposed, and near it a 'brick aqueduct' which he also mentions. Amongst the older villagers the story is still told of the visit of the *Balios* and the antiquities which he found.

<sup>1</sup> Budge, *Rise and Progress of Assyriology*, p. 132.

As Rassam had anticipated, in spite of the enormous gangs of men employed, finds at Nimrûd and Kuyunjik were now few and far between. So in 1879 he decided on another attempt at Nebi Yunus, where the villagers and religious guardians had so far frustrated all attempts to excavate.

He prepared the way by spending much of his time in the village in order to gain the confidence of the little community which lived there. Next, as he had expected, he found more than one householder whose home was in a dilapidated condition, prepared to sell for a reasonably good price. In this way he gradually acquired quite a large amount of property on the mound, and, without actually demolishing the buildings, began to excavate in their *sirdabs* and connect his shafts by tunnels. There is no knowing what effect this method of procedure would eventually have had on the palace of Esarhaddon, whose existence Layard had established beneath the village, or for that matter on the buildings above ground. As it proved, Rassam had hardly begun his underground operations when a counter-intrigue among the religious notables of Mosul became evident, and an appeal by them to the Minister of Public Instruction in Istanbul resulted in an official ban on his work.

He now had excavations in hand both at Babylon and Birs Nimrod, but these did not prevent him extending his explorations to the borders of Syria and the remote shores of Lake Van. His excavations at Van do not fall within the province of this story, but the following is an example of his discoveries on the Khabûr. He says:

There is a mound at the junction of the Jarajir [Jaghjagh?] River with the Khaboor, wherein I made some tentative excavations, and after a few days' labour some important sculptures were discovered; but as soon as the local authorities at Ras-al-ain heard of the find they sent and turned away my workmen, and took possession of the relics, which I was told consisted of crouching lions and a bas-relief on which were represented horses and other animals. The only object my overseer was able to come away with was a fragment of black basalt, whereon there were engraved a few hieroglyphic figures, which I brought to the British Museum. Unfortunately I could not go there myself. . . .<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Rassam, *Asshur and the Land of Nimrod*, p. 313. These antiquities were doubtless Syro-Hittite.

Babylon and Borsippa were naturally unproductive according to Rassam's standard, as indeed were most of the other southern mounds which he 'opened'. Tell Ibrāhīm, for instance, where the ruins of the Babylonian city of Kuthah are buried beneath twenty feet of later occupational debris, completely defeated him.

Although it had no less than twenty tunnels and trenches opened in it, there was no indication whatever in them to give me any hope of finding Babylonian remains.

When he found bricks stamped with the name of Nebuchadnezzar, he surmised that 'they might have been taken there from another place'.

It was not until the end of 1880 that Rassam made his first major find in Babylonia. This was the site of the Biblical Sepharvaim,<sup>1</sup> which to-day is called Abu Habbah. Abu Habbah is located about twenty miles south-west of Baghdad near the Yusufiyah canal, and is easily recognizable as the ruins of a walled city with a small *ziggurat* in the centre, surrounded by a group of public buildings. Here Rassam was fortunate from the first. Starting work near the *ziggurat* mound he found a chamber with a bitumen-covered pavement, which some strange impulse induced him to break through. Beneath it he found an inscribed terra-cotta box, closed with a lid, and inside it the now-famous marble tablet of King Nabu-apal-idinna with its beautiful relief of the Sun-God in his shrine. An inscription in front of the shrine at once provided both the identification of the city and the name of the temple of which this chamber formed a part. It read: 'Image of Shamash the Great Lord, dwelling in Ebabarra in the city of Sippar.'

Rassam estimated that the buildings surrounding the *ziggurat* comprised about three hundred chambers grouped around several courts, and the mud-brick walls must in this case have been unmistakable, for he has even left a primitive plan showing the disposition of a number of them.<sup>2</sup> During the eighteen months which followed he excavated about 170 rooms and obtained an immense

<sup>1</sup> 2 Kings xvii. 24, 31.

<sup>2</sup> Rassam, *Asshur and the Land of Nimrod*, p. 407.

## FOUNDATIONS IN THE DUST

volume of inscribed cylinders and tablets from them.<sup>1</sup> The content of one cylinder alone is sufficient to show their great interest. It was an inscription of Nabonidus, the last King of Babylon, whose life, up to the time when his son Belshazzar saw the 'writing on the wall', was dedicated almost wholly to antiquarian research. It describes how, interesting himself in the original foundation of this very temple, he had determined to check his theories by excavating. Eighteen cubits beneath the contemporary pavement his workmen had come upon a foundation-stone originally laid by Naram-Sin, son of Sargon of Akkad, 'which for 3,200 years no previous king had seen'. As dating evidence alone this cylinder was a priceless discovery.

Unlike the Kuyunjik library the Sippar tablets were of unbaked clay, and accordingly very fragile.<sup>2</sup> They lay in heaps, clinging together in the clayey soil and could not be removed without many breakages. Of their general content Hilprecht gives an extremely good summary. He says:

For the greater part these documents are of a business character, referring to the administration of the temple and its property, to the daily sacrifices of Shamash and other gods, to the weaving of their garments, the manufacture of their jewelry and vessels, the building and repairing of their houses, and to the execution of various orders given in connexion with the worshipping of their images and the maintenance of their priesthood. At the same time they make us acquainted with the duties and occupations of the many classes of temple officers and their large body of servants, with the ordinary tithes paid by the faithful and with many other revenues accruing to the sanctuary from all kinds of gifts, from the lease of real estate, slaves, and animals, and from the sale of products from fields and stables. As tithes were frequently paid in kind, it became necessary to establish regular depots along the principal canals, where scribes stored and registered everything that came in. Among the goods thus received we notice vegetables, meat and other perishable objects which the temple alone could not consume, and which,

<sup>1</sup> His own estimate was 40,000 to 50,000.

<sup>2</sup> Writing in November 1945, it may be of interest to mention that a small Iraq Government excavation at Tell Harmal near Baghdad has to-day produced its thousandth tablet of this type. King Feisal II, on an informal visit to the mound, assisted in extracting the last consignment.

therefore, had to be sold or exchanged before they decayed or decreased in value. No wonder that apart from its distinct religious sphere the great temple of Shamash at Sippara in many respects resembled one of the great business firms of Babel or Nippur.<sup>1</sup>

In 1882 Rassam left Mesopotamia for the last time. A late portrait, which serves as a frontispiece to *Asshur and the Land of Nimrod* shows, against a map of Assyria, an old gentleman with white hair and beard, holding up to the camera a large photograph of the Balawât Gates, as though determined that with these at least his name should be associated by posterity.

<sup>1</sup> Hilprecht, *Explorations in Bible Lands*, p. 275.

## *Chapter Twelve*

### BIRTH OF A CONSCIENCE

REFERENCE has already been made at the beginning of the last chapter to the Sumerian city of Lagash, whose impressive ruins, now known as Telloh, are situated at the tail of the Shatt al Hai canal, and to the chance by which its excavation eventually fell to the lot of the French. The story of how this came about is coloured by an atmosphere of almost childish international rivalry perfectly in accord with the old Mesopotamian tradition.

Ernest de Sarzec, being in 1877 French vice-consul at Basrah, found himself 'longing for a more serious occupation to fill out the ample time left him by the slight duties of his consular position'. At Basrah we are told that

An occasional ride into the desert, with its bracing air, and the hunting of the wild boar, francolin and bustard are the general means by which the members of the European colony try to keep up their energy and vitality in the hothouse atmosphere of this tropical region. But such an aimless life was very little to the liking of de Sarzec.<sup>1</sup>

He accordingly emulated his earlier compatriots in Mosul by interesting himself in archaeology, and though, as will presently be seen, his initial impetus was largely commercial, its eventual outcome was greatly to the advantage of the French nation. De Sarzec first heard of Telloh from Mr. J. Asfar, of the steamship company then known as Strick-Asfar, who had himself been a dealer in antiquities in a small way. He was dissuaded from applying to Istanbul for a permit to excavate, partly by fear of attracting Rassam's attention to the mound, and partly due to the very independent status of south Babylonia at that time under the Muntafiq chief, Nâsir Pasha.<sup>2</sup> He, therefore, without more ado, set about a general examination of the site by a series of trial-trenches. Asfar had already told him of fine

<sup>1</sup> *ibid.* p. 216.

<sup>2</sup> Founder of Nâsiriyah and afterwards first Vâli of Basrah.

## BIRTH OF A CONSCIENCE

diorite statues which purported to have been seen among the ruins, and several of these he found exposed to view on his arrival. The excavations, which he carried on from March until June 1877 and reopened from February to June in 1878, produced further statues and a great quantity of inscribed material, all of which he successfully transported to Paris, and disposed of it to the Louvre for a sum of 130,000 francs.<sup>1</sup>

Whilst de Sarzec was absent in France, Rassam also found time to take a look at Telloh. He was at first disconcerted to find that, not being technically included in the Pashalik of Baghdad, the site did not fall within the area assigned to him by his *firmân*. But directly he heard that de Sarzec had already made soundings there without any permit, he determined to follow suit. Hastily collecting a gang of local Arabs, he set them to work on the highest mound, and within a few hours they had unearthed a pair of inscribed gate-sockets, memorial-cones, tablets and a number of red stone mace-heads which he supposed to be 'weights'. The largest of the diorite statues de Sarzec had postponed removing until his return, and had consequently reburied, but Rassam says: 'As I wished to take a squeeze of the inscription on it for the British Museum, I had it wholly dug out.' As can be imagined, it was broken up by local Arabs after his departure. Nor was the provenance of the pivot-stones, one of which reached England, ever exactly located.

After three days' digging, fighting broke out among Rassam's workmen and he was compelled to abandon the excavation. He hoped, however, by application to Layard, to obtain a special concession for excavations at Telloh before de Sarzec returned. In this design he was thwarted, as he found on inquiring that de Sarzec himself had already obtained one. He says:

I did not know at first that M. Sarzac was negotiating for a concession to excavate at Telloh, but supposed only that he had asked the French Government to give him a grant for exploration in Southern Babylonia, which they had refused to do; and this put me off the scent.

He ends almost peevishly:

From what I have seen of the place of M. Sarzac's discoveries I am

<sup>1</sup> Budge, *Rise and Progress of Assyriology*, p. 198.

## FOUNDATIONS IN THE DUST

certain that if I had continued my researches there one day longer, I should have come upon the nest of black statues which were discovered in the highest mound. . . .

Happily for de Sarzec, who, armed with a *firmân* and subsidized by the French Government, could now at least be free from interference or molestation by Rassam's gangs, it was not a matter of 'continuing his researches one or two days more' in order to find a 'nest of statues'. His annual seasons of excavation were to be continued almost uninterrupted until the end of the century, and the whole vast site systematically examined. Actually it would be absurd to pretend that there was yet much 'system' in the process of excavation. It was still only possible to follow the best preserved and most obvious crude-brick walls, and the plans which de Sarzec left are most scanty and incomplete.<sup>1</sup> Yet the work was leisured and methodical, and Budge's allegation<sup>2</sup> that he 'attacked mound after mound, but excavated none of them completely' is an unfair one, if only because no mound in the history of archaeology has ever been *completely* excavated—least of all those where Budge himself worked.

Little has yet been said of the nature of the finds which de Sarzec brought to the Louvre from Telloh, and this must now be remedied, since by 1901 they had earned for Lagash the doubtful distinction of being characterized 'the Pompeii of early Babylonian antiquity'.<sup>3</sup> Actually they are divided into many different categories, but first and foremost among these comes the archaic sculpture of the late third millenium; portrait-statues in diorite or other hard stones of the *ishakku* governors of Lagash. To-day more than a score of them adorn the Louvre, while others found their way to England and America after de Sarzec's final departure from Telloh. The cuneiform inscriptions with which they were usually covered show at least six of those in the Louvre to represent Gudea, the seventh and most famous governor of Lagash.

These statues were the first examples of pre-Babylonian art to

<sup>1</sup> More than thirty years after his death one of his successors in the field wrote to a friend: 'C'est incompréhensible, mon cher collègue, mais on ne trouve jamais de murs'.

<sup>2</sup> Budge, *Rise and Progress of Assyriology*, p. 198.

<sup>3</sup> Louvre Catalogue, 1901.

## BIRTH OF A CONSCIENCE

reach Europe, and they brought sharply into focus an archaic culture whose existence had till now been hardly more than suspected. Even the art of the Assyrians, separated in time from these new finds by a matter of fifteen hundred years, began to appear by comparison stereotyped or over-representational. And herein lay the importance of the new exhibits at the Louvre, for they drew the attention not only of antiquarians and scholars but of art-critics and the great contemporary artists of the French school. For here at last, resurrected from the remote past, were masterpieces of art which could be assessed on their own merits 'independently of any question of their age or school, of the sources from which they sprang, of the conditions which helped to shape them and of the traditions which they embody'.<sup>1</sup> Since those days much criticism has been lavished upon them, as also upon the work of even earlier Sumerian sculptures. It must suffice here to say that in aesthetic expression alone they rival the work of almost any period in the history of art.

One of the earlier carvings from Telloh, which go back another five hundred years before the time of Gudea, is the fragmentary 'Stela of the Vultures', whose subject is as important as its style. It represents, as H. G. Wells recently pointed out, the birth of military discipline; the earliest record of a force of armed men marching in step and led by a commander. Wells says:

The natural man is a spasmodic and untrustworthy fighter, very violent when he is roused, but very difficult to keep roused. The men who fight in cave paintings are loose scrappers, not warriors. There have only been warriors since the dawn of the early city-states. The warrior appears in formation in early Sumerian carvings. There you see him in a sort of phalanx, advancing with his shield locked with that of the next man and their spears at a level making an invincible line. All down the changing historical record that body of disciplined infantrymen appears and reappears. . . .<sup>2</sup>

The Sumerian texts from Telloh are no less interesting. Among the records of the early governors of Lagash is the story of one such armed expedition against the neighbouring state of Umma<sup>3</sup> which

<sup>1</sup> C. L. Woolley, *The Development of Sumerian Art*, London 1935, p. 29.

<sup>2</sup> H. G. Wells, *Phoenix*, London 1942, p. 31.

<sup>3</sup> Umma = Tell Jokha.

## FOUNDATIONS IN THE DUST

may be said to be the first military campaign in the known history of the world. The 'Stela of the Vultures' was set up by a prince called Eannatum to mark the boundary between the two states. Umma was situated higher up on the same branch of the Euphrates as Lagash, and quarrels between them were usually on the subject of irrigation water. There is an equally interesting record of a later governor, Entemena, who decided to remove the cause of such disputes by building a canal to bring water directly to Lagash from the Tigris. This canal still survives in the form of the Shatt al Hai, which leaves the Tigris at the Kût barrage and flows southwards towards Telloh.

Unhappily a great proportion of the tablets obtained from Telloh do not derive from de Sarzec's legitimate excavations, for it was about this time that the illicit trade in antiquities started in real earnest. It is not impossible that the whole trouble may be traced to de Sarzec's own indiscretion in letting it be known that he had sold his first group of finds to the Louvre for £5,000. Added to this, Rassam's semi-commercial rapacity over removable antiquities was sufficiently obvious to make them equally fair game for rival speculators. In any case the early eighteen-eighties saw the first recognized dealers in antiquities established in the Baghdad bazaar. The hand which they took in the excavation of Telloh makes a story sufficiently characteristic to tell in full, and for this purpose it will be most convenient to quote at some length from Sir Wallis Budge, who himself extracted it from various sources on a visit to Iraq some years later.

Budge says:

After 1881 the intervals between de Sarzec's periods of work on the mounds grew longer and longer; and as he took no steps to safeguard his interest in them, the local Arabs, working hand-in-hand with the men who had been with Rassam in 1879-82, and supplied with money by the dealers in Baghdad, began to excavate the mounds on their own account. Their object was not to find large antiquities, which could not be easily smuggled out of the country, but inscribed clay tablets, which could be carried on the person in the folds of the cloak, or packed in small boxes. . . .

## BIRTH OF A CONSCIENCE

The ruins of Tall Loh were clearly those of a great mercantile community and of a royal residence; and this being so, the records of the business transacted there, the tax accounts and the temple library must be there somewhere. The search for the record office and clearing-house of Lagash could not be successfully carried on by clandestine excavations at night; so by arrangement with local officials the work was carried on openly by day. . . . At length the unauthorized diggers found what they were looking for in a small compact mound, in which was a series of little chambers containing baked clay inscribed tablets. The news of their discovery spread, as such things will, with extraordinary rapidity; and before they had made arrangements to remove the tablets, de Sarzec appeared at Al-Basrah. The diggers hurriedly shovelled back sand and earth over the chambers and began to dig in another mound, one which de Sarzec had partially excavated.<sup>1</sup>

On his arrival at Telloh they denied all knowledge of any discovery of tablets, and by one excuse or another prevented him from digging in the mound where they actually were. After de Sarzec's departure the tablet chambers were once more opened up and in a comparatively short period, between 35,000 and 40,000 tablets found their way into the hands of the Baghdad dealers. Budge says:

Every buyer exported his purchases as soon as possible; and so the great collection of Tall Loh tablets was very soon scattered all over the civilized world.

Even in more recent years Telloh has been a difficult site to protect from illicit digging. During the interval between de Sarzec's death in 1901 and the resumption of the French excavation in 1903, and again after the first world war, spasmodic looting continued, not only of tablets but of larger antiquities. Further diorite statues came to light and, after changing hands many times found their way into various museums. A magnificent life-size 'Governor of Lagash' was bought by the British Museum from a London dealer; the head and body of one small but very fine 'Gudea' came to rest some thousands of miles apart, in the University Museum of Pennsylvania and the Iraq Museum respectively; others are known to be still 'on the market'. The Louvre authorities closed their excavations at Telloh with some appearance of finality in 1931, but there can be no pretence

<sup>1</sup> Budge, *Rise and Progress of Assyriology*, p. 198.

## FOUNDATIONS IN THE DUST

that the site is in the scientific or any other sense completely explored.

The first American excavations in Mesopotamia began in 1887 at the site of Nippur, which lies on the old easternmost course of the Euphrates, not far from the squalid little modern settlement called Sûq al Afaq. From the very start the members of the expedition, including the field-director, Peters, found themselves completely out of their element in dealing with the tribal people in whose territory they were to work, and considerably overawed by the magnitude of the task which they had accepted with so much enthusiasm in the comfortable but now remote committee room of Pennsylvania University. Hilprecht at least, who was one of the party which set out from Hillah across the *chól* on a February morning, was sufficiently impressed by his first sight of the great *ziggurat* mound which was their destination. In a style at that time prescribed for narratives of exploration he relates:

Finally on the third morning Bint-al-Amir majestically towering above the wide-stretched mounds of Nuffar, rose clear on the horizon. More than 2,000 years ago the huge terraces and walls of the most renowned Babylonian sanctuary had crumbled to a formless mass. But even in their utter desolation they still seemed to testify to the lofty aspirations of a bygone race. . . .

He adds more prosaically:

What would our committee at home have said at the sight of this enormous ruin, resembling more a picturesque mountain range than the last impressive remains of human constructions.

Peters neglected every precaution which could have contributed towards the quiet progress of his work, and since the Afaq tribes were and are a poor and thieving people, not always within control of the local authorities, trouble was bound to follow. Instead of placing himself and his party under the protection of an appropriate sheikh, and paying him a small subsidy in return for supplying labour and protecting his interests, he established his camp on the summit of the *ziggurat* mound and allowed his Turkish commissar to dictate terms. A gang of 100 to 250 Arab workmen under no



The Looting of the American Camp at Nippur  
by the Afaq Arabs

CENTRAL ARCHAEOLOGICAL EXHIBITION  
BRISTOL, NOVEMBER 1908

THE BRITISH MUSEUM, LONDON

THE BRITISH MUSEUM, LONDON

THE BRITISH MUSEUM, LONDON

COMMITTEE

1911

1912

1913

1914

1915

1916

1917

1918

1919

1920

1921

1922

1923

1924

1925

1926

## BIRTH OF A CONSCIENCE

Arabic-speaking authority would at any time prove something of a handful, and the exaggerated ferocity bred in Peters himself by nervous anxiety and inadequate knowledge of local manners of course proved fatal. Early in April thieving began at night and a tribesman was shot dead by one of the camp-guards. Fearing some mass retaliation, Peters sent for a section of gendarmes from Diwaniyah, and on their arrival the mound was surrounded and besieged by the Afaq. The rest is related by Hilprecht:

On Thursday, 18 April, long before the sun rose, the whole expedition was in readiness to vacate the mounds and to force their way to Hilla, when upon the treacherous order of Mukota, an Arab secretly set fire to our huts of reeds and mats and laid the whole camp in ashes in the short space of five minutes. For a while the utmost confusion prevailed; the *ẓabīye* got demoralized, and occupied a neighbouring hill; and while we were trying to save our effects, many of the Arabs commenced plundering. Half the horses perished in the flames, firearms and saddlebags and \$1000 in gold fell into the hands of the marauders, but all the antiquities were saved. Under the war-dance and yells of the frantic Arabs the expedition finally withdrew. . . .<sup>1</sup>

So Peters' first season at Nippur ended in chaos and disaster.

Surprisingly enough the group of antiquarian enthusiasts in the United States who had financed this venture seemed comparatively undeterred by its initial misfire, and determined to persevere. In the new year of 1890 the expedition returned to Telloh to try its luck once more. Circumstances were now more favourable, for the Afaq marshes had in the interval been afflicted by a cholera epidemic which had left the tribes dispirited and impoverished, and though the Americans persisted in the curious policy of attempting to intimidate them with firework displays and other 'big magics' considered effective with 'savage' peoples, the good wages they offered proved an irresistible attraction. The new and improved excavating camp at the foot of the mound, with its roomy compound enclosed by a bastion of camel-thorn, became a permanent installation, and three long seasons' work were accomplished before the end of the century.

<sup>1</sup> Hilprecht, *Explorations in Bible Lands*, p. 317.

## FOUNDATIONS IN THE DUST

As was the case with so many other Babylonian sites, by far the most important result of the Nippur excavations was the great mass of inscribed material found there. In all, about thirty thousand tablets were collected, mostly texts written in the Sumerian language and dating over a period of a thousand years, starting with the mid-third millenium B.C. Most significant of all was the group devoted to Sumerian literature. For it must be remembered that, out of the quarter of a million or so Sumerian texts which have in the past come to light in Babylonia, over ninety-five per cent are economic in character, that is to say, bills, receipts, contracts of sale and exchange and other business documents, conforming to a set of conventional formulae and consequently fairly easy to read. The Sumerian literary tablets from Nippur number in all about 2,100 and constitute a major proportion of those at present known to exist. The recent publication of a first instalment<sup>1</sup> gives one a fore-taste of the great contribution which they will eventually make to the study of Sumerian culture.

Judging from the publications of Peters, Hilprecht, and others and the present appearance of the site, method in the Nippur excavations had reached about the same standard of efficiency as under the directorship of de Sarzec at Telloh. It is perhaps an indication of the birth of some sort of professional conscience in this respect that it should now have become a subject of mutual criticism among archaeologists of different nationalities. Budge, for instance, who was in Iraq on a British Museum mission while excavations both at Nippur and Telloh were in progress, formed an equally poor opinion of the pretensions of either to call themselves 'scientific', and was not beyond opposing this opinion to French and American criticism of his colleagues and predecessors who had excavated for the British Museum. Of de Sarzec, for instance, he says:

A French archaeologist, in describing Rassam's excavations in 1879-1882, remarks, '*En Chaldée comme en Assyrie ses travaux ressemblent plus à un pillage qu'à une fouille scientifique*' (Fossey, *Manuel*, p. 52); and the excavations of de Sarzec may be rightly described by the same words.

<sup>1</sup> S. N. Kramer, *Sumerian Mythology*, Philadelphia 1944.

<sup>2</sup> Budge, *Rise and Progress of Assyriology*, p. 202.

## BIRTH OF A CONSCIENCE

In another paragraph<sup>1</sup> he is equally disparaging about the work at Nippur.

Wallis Budge was at this time an assistant in the Department of Oriental Antiquities at the British Museum. His first mission to Mesopotamia took place in 1888, and resulted from a most peculiar and unfortunate situation which had arisen in regard to ancient sites in Assyria and Babylonia previously excavated by the Trustees' agents.

When Rassam finally left Iraq for good in 1882 he had appointed workmen to guard such important sites as Kuyunjik in the north and Abu Habbah in the south, where the museum considered itself to have proprietary rights, and to prevent any excavation by unauthorized parties. Since that time large consignments of tablets had begun to be dispatched to various European museums by Baghdad dealers, and evidence provided by the character and text of some of them suggested that they originated in the very sites which the Trustees were paying guardians to protect. It was sufficiently disconcerting to find that in some cases the dealers from whom the tablets were bought seemed likely to be the guardians themselves; but what was even worse, owing to Rassam's habit of leaving his excavations unsupervised, certain tablets now on the market seemed likely to have been found during excavations paid for by the British Museum. This was a situation which plainly required investigation, and Budge was selected as the most suitable person to undertake this difficult task, having gained some experience of such negotiations while purchasing antiquities for the museum in Egypt during the previous year.

Partly in order to place his mission on a more outwardly comprehensible footing, the Trustees at the same time decided to request a renewal of their *firmân* for the excavations in Mesopotamia. The problem as to which site should be chosen must have been considerable, since work in the past had been started and abandoned

<sup>1</sup> Replying to criticism by Breasted of British excavating methods at Kuyunjik, which he called 'unscientific', Budge says: 'More travellers than one who have seen the site of the American excavations at Nippur have failed to see there any exhibition of scientific digging.' *Rise and Progress*, p. 144.

## FOUNDATIONS IN THE DUST

on such a very large number of mounds, and none could in any sense be considered completed. Budge, in fact, makes the entirely true and very significant admission that, in his search for antiquities, 'No British excavator had yet laid bare the ruins of the buildings of any Assyrian or Babylonian town'.<sup>1</sup> Facts such as these did not facilitate the negotiaion of a *firmân*, especially as the Turks themselves had recently shown signs of becoming archaeologically minded. An Imperial Ottoman Museum had been founded and placed in charge of a cultured and enterprising Ottoman official, while plans were being made for excavations subsidized by the Porte. In the end Kuyunjik was provisionally selected for the renewed attentions of British excavators.

Budge, who was ready to leave London by December 1887, now paid a second visit to Egypt on his way to Baghdad, and it was on this occasion that he succeeded in purchasing part of the famous Tell el Amarnah tablets, which give so poignant a picture of the decaying Egyptian Empire in the time of the Apostate Pharaoh, Akhenaton. Owing to the difficulties involved in sending them to England, they were still in his possession when he reached Basrah by boat from Suez.

From Basrah, Budge travelled by river-steamer up the Tigris. On reaching Baghdad he had an invitation to stay on board the small Indian mail steamer *Comet*, which was temporarily moored in mid-stream near the centre of the town, and thither he betook himself in one of the circular coracles, called *gufas*, which are as characteristic of the Iraq waterways as camels are in the desert. There was an alarming tussle with customs officials, who mistook the box containing the Amarnah tablets for smuggled whisky; but thanks to the intervention of Butterworth, the captain of the *Comet*, both Budge and his box were in the end safely admitted to 'British territory'.

The next step was to call at the British Residency and present to Colonel Tweedie, then Consul-General in Baghdad, the letters of introduction with which he had been provided by Lord Salisbury, Rawlinson and others. He was, of course, fascinated to see the milieu which had provided a setting for so many distinguished pioneers

<sup>1</sup> Budge, *By Nile and Tigris*, Vol. I, p. 126.

## BIRTH OF A CONSCIENCE

of Mesopotamian archaeology, and his excellent account of it is enhanced by a photograph<sup>1</sup> of the central courtyard showing Tweedie in diplomatic uniform supported by his staff and Sikh guard. It is easily recognizable as the same building, now known as the 'Eastern Palace Hotel', which appears in the clumsy engravings made by Felix Jones thirty years earlier.<sup>2</sup>

Tweedie impressed his visitor very much in the same way as Stratford Canning had Layard on his first visit to the Istanbul Embassy. He embarked at once on a lengthy discussion of the Arab horse, quoting just sufficient opinions of Arab and Persian writers in the original tongue to acquaint Budge with his mastery of oriental languages. Then, turning to the letters of introduction, he first professed himself unable to comprehend why such distinguished scholars and diplomats should favour with personal communications 'a humble Indian officer sent to Baghdad to qualify for a pension'. Though unable to offer Budge accommodation in the Residency, he invited him, whenever he cared, to eat at his table, adding: 'And I can promise to give you a new kind of curry every night for a month at a stretch, so good a cook has God given me.' Finally, he expressed himself in no uncertain terms on the subject of the Trustees and their tablets. In effect, he informed Budge that (a) only Britishers should from the first have been employed as supervisors of excavations, (b) the Museum had no legal right at all to appoint watchmen after leaving a site, (c) the Museum should have selected certain sites and excavated them completely because it would now be out of the question to prevent illicit digging at the many sites to which they had drawn the attention of local dealers. Tweedie next informed him that the local Turkish inspector of antiquities was aware of the purpose for which he had come to Baghdad and would do everything possible to prevent him from purchasing tablets himself. He warned him that if he got into trouble on this account he could not expect any official help. Ending characteristically with the usual rather pointless Arab proverb about a fox and a camel, he rose and invited Budge to lunch among the carpets, hangings and fretted panelling collected in the past by Rawlinson, Taylor, Rich, and many others.

<sup>1</sup> *ibid.* I, facing p. 230.

<sup>2</sup> Felix Jones, *Memoirs*, facing p. 310.

## FOUNDATIONS IN THE DUST

Knowing the character of most provincial Turkish officials, and having by this time probably summed up Wallis Budge, Tweedie cannot have anticipated that his official advice would be taken as more than a formal admonition. Budge, in fact, went straight from the Residency to call on Badri Beg, the Antiquities Inspector, from whom he received every courtesy. He says:

He described the difficulties which attended the purchase of tablets and their export from Baghdad, and proposed that I should commission him to act as buyer for the Museum. When I explained that this was impossible he showed no ill-feeling, but promptly said that he would do his utmost to persuade Hamdi Bey and the Porte to renew our permit to make excavations. In return he begged me to propose that the appointment as Delegate to watch our excavations on behalf of the Porte, if the permit were obtained, should be given to him, and I thanked him and agreed to do so.

Budge made arrangements with Badri Beg to be taken to the houses of the dealers who had tablets in their possession and was impressed with the size of their collections, which in some cases amounted to 'many hundreds'. He also noted that the majority of them came from sites excavated by the British Museum. He then took particulars of the dealers' names and returned to the *Comet*. On comparing the names with those on the letters of introduction given him by Rassam to the guardians employed by the Trustees, he was hardly surprised to find that they were identical. During the following days he set to work purchasing tablets for the museum on a large scale, and found the dealers most anxious to sell. This was easily explained when he discovered from a reliable source that Badri Beg had arranged for his purchases to be confiscated from him on his departure from Baghdad and sold back to the dealers for a fraction of the price which he had paid. To ensure the success of this plan the inspector had customs officials posted in a boat to watch his movements to and from the *Comet*. Budge, however, had arranged that the boxes containing the tablets should be brought out by *gufa* at night, and the whole of his purchases were thus safely shipped on the side of the steamer facing away from the shore. Soon afterwards the *Comet* left for Basrah carrying a Persian nobleman bound for India on a state visit. Budge's Babylonian tablets, to-

## BIRTH OF A CONSCIENCE

gether with those from Tell el Amarnah, were transferred to an Indian mail steamer with the Khan's baggage. Badri Beg was under the impression that Budge had not yet taken delivery of the tablets and, in order to reassure him, Budge let it be known that he was about to pay a lengthy visit to Babylon and Abu Habbah.

Budge excuses himself for this very blatant piece of sharp practice on the grounds of the Turkish Government's inability to enforce its own laws and acquire the tablets for the Imperial Ottoman Museum. He says:

I had to decide whether the tablets should go to Berlin, or France, or America or the British Museum, for there was not the remotest chance of their going to Constantinople, and I determined that they should go to the British Museum, and so I bought them. It was exactly the same in Egypt, although the Trustees had no claim at all on the Tall-al-Amarnah tablets. Had I not come to a decision at once, and taken the eighty-two tablets when I had the chance of getting them, they would certainly have gone to the Berlin Museum, or into the possession of some private collector, or anywhere except the Government Museum of Egyptian Antiquities, Cairo. When the Directors of Museums in the East make it worth the while of natives to bring their 'finds' to them, nothing of importance will find its way to Europe or America.<sup>1</sup>

Budge now visited Babylon, Birs Nimrod, and Abu Habbah, and everywhere found traces of a brisk trade in Babylonian tablets. He was considerably shocked by the evidence which he saw not only of havoc wrought on the sites by unskilled diggers, but by stories of the clumsy attempts to export the tablets when found. One man had sent several loosely packed cases on camel-back to Damascus, and was surprised when they arrived full of powdered clay. Another had smuggled his tablets in bales of cotton, which went through the machine before they could be extracted. Generally speaking it seemed surprising that any had reached the dealers intact. One might suppose that all this would have convinced Budge of the soundness of Colonel Tweedie's judgement in the matter. His reaction, on the contrary, was to make a mental note of the site called Der, a few miles from Abu Habbah, as being another which might be subjected to the same treatment.

<sup>1</sup> Budge, *By Nile and Tigris*, Vol. I, p. 241.

## FOUNDATIONS IN THE DUST

After a brief visit to the ruins of 'Aqar Qûf, he left Baghdad by river steamer for Basrah. When a strict customs examination of his baggage failed to produce any tablets, the Baghdad authorities drafted a telegram to Istanbul asking for authority to prevent him leaving the country. In return for a small service, a friendly post office official arranged an accident to the wires just outside the city, and by the time the reply arrived, Budge had embarked for England.

It is hardly surprising that Budge's findings in connexion with the 'leakages' of tablets from sites excavated by Rassam should have led to some unpleasantness on his return to London. Evidence of their having both expressed themselves energetically on the subject is provided by a repercussion some years later in the form of an action for slander brought by Rassam against Budge in 1893. A contemporary number of the *Daily News* gives the following slightly facetious account of it:

Mr. Rassam has obtained a verdict for fifty pounds in his action against Mr. Budge of the British Museum. It is enough. Mr. Rassam was the gentleman who took out the famous letter to King Theodore of Abyssinia, and was imprisoned, and afterwards handsomely indemnified for his pains. Subsequently he conducted Assyrian excavations at Abu Habbah, in the interest of the British Museum, but, greatly to the disgust of the Museum, the best things discovered did not find their way to the national collection. Other Museums obtained them off the private brokers into whose hands they passed. Mr. Budge, a British Museum official, expressed himself too freely on the subject in regard to the conduct and responsibility of Mr. Rassam. He said that we only got the rubbish, and that the foreigners got the good things, and moreover, that they got them through the negligence of Mr. Rassam, or with his connivance. He went so far as to say that the overseers were the relations of Mr. Rassam, and that they furthered his private breaches of trust. This was not true, they were not Mr. Rassam's relations; and the Eastern imagination is so luxuriant. Mr. Rassam maintained that all he found he sent home, and it was not his fault if precious things were afterwards found by others and sold at a good profit. It was his misfortune, beyond question, for as the mound was excavated at the expense of his employers, all the plums should have gone to them. Mr. Budge made what most persons would have considered an ample apology, but this was not enough for Mr. Rassam or for his counsellors. Sir Henry Layard and

## BIRTH OF A CONSCIENCE

Mr. Renouf gave evidence on behalf of Mr. Rassam, and the trial was in some respects a sort of antiquarian festival. These distinguished persons have not been in the intimacy of Ashur-bani-pal for nothing. Their measures of time are not as our measures. Otherwise the better part of a week would hardly have been devoted to such a case.<sup>1</sup>

One would have supposed that, in view of what had happened, Budge would have had some misgivings as to his official reception on any future visit to Baghdad. Yet stories such as the discomfiture of Badri Beg have a tendency to be remembered only as long as their entertainment value lasts. As it proved, he returned twice more to Iraq; and spent two further winter seasons excavating and buying antiquities. In the summer of 1888 the Trustees, who were considering the compilation of a private catalogue of the tablets from Nineveh, decided that the trenches and debris of Kuyunjik should be given one more 'going over' in order to give the published list a definitive character. The Turkish authorities insisted that the person to be in charge of the excavations should make application in person for the *firmân*. So Budge was dispatched to Istanbul to enlist the help of the Ambassador, Sir William White. He gives the most interesting account of his first visit to Hamdi Bey, Director of the Imperial Ottoman Museum, and of his beautiful house, 'Cool Fountain', overlooking the Bosphorus, with its elaborate garden and priceless collection of art treasures. He found this aristocratic and cultivated Turk 'provoked almost beyond endurance' by a vulgar and abusive article about himself just published in the *Contemporary Review* by an English archaeologist called J. T. Bent, whom he had been compelled to prevent from exporting certain antiquities from Turkish territory. The passages from this article, which Budge re-quotes, with their bad-mannered references to the 'ladies of his house', give one an impression of how very few Englishmen at that time were capable of sensibility or discrimination in dealing with Eastern peoples. It is to Hamdi's credit that he nevertheless received Budge with the greatest courtesy, and, though it was now contrary to the Turkish law, agreed to the Trustees' continued search for tablets at Kuyunjik, provided only that they would in return present the Ottoman Museum with archaeological publications and castes

<sup>1</sup> *ibid.* Vol. II, p. 303.

## FOUNDATIONS IN THE DUST

of Assyrian reliefs to the equivalent value. This arrangement Budge of course eagerly accepted. The granting of the actual *firmân*, however, depended in the end on a direct appeal to the Sultan by the Ambassador, and this White agreed to effect only on the basis of a curious private bargain. He stipulated that when Budge left for Mosul he should take with him White's young son, who was at a loose end in Istanbul and anxious for some experience of Eastern travel.

Budge and young White travelled by boat to Alexandretta, where a member of the well-known Catani family set them on their way by the old Aleppo-Mardin road to Mosul. Budge's excavations at Kuyunjik on this occasion consisted in hardly more than sifting through the earth thrown out by previous excavators, and the fact that he found about two hundred tablets in this way testifies to the crudeness of earlier digging methods. A great deal of his time in Mosul was spent in the purchase of ancient Greek, Syriac, and Arabic manuscripts from the various religious communities. He also, as we have seen, visited Balawât with Hormuzd Rassam's nephew, Nimrûd.<sup>1</sup> In the spring of 1889 he returned to London.

Budge's third season's work in Iraq was mainly concerned with the site called Der, near Abu Habbah, which he had taken note of on his first visit to Babylonia. During the summer of 1889 the Trustees applied for a new permit to excavate Der 'and a number of other sites in the neighbourhood'. The Porte preferred that this should limit their work to Der itself, but otherwise agreed to arranging a *firmân*. This involved applying to the government of Baghdad for particulars of the situation, ownership, etc., of the site, and it became generally known that Budge was about to excavate it. When Budge reached Baghdad in the winter of 1890 he had hardly been an hour in the town before he heard of the effect which this had had. In point of fact the Wâli of Baghdad had decided, apparently with the connivance of the Istanbul authorities, to make a preliminary 'examination' of the site before the *firmân* was granted, and this examination had been astonishingly productive. Nearly ten thousand tablets had been sold to the dealers in Baghdad and he had then been able conscientiously to inform the Porte that Der

<sup>1</sup> See p. 173.

## BIRTH OF A CONSCIENCE

had no great possibilities and there should be no objection to giving Budge his *firmân*.

Budge's informant was able to give him a first-hand account of the discovery. He said that

there were many thousands of contract-tablets and business documents in clay cases, stamped with the impressions of the seals of witnesses. The biggest of these were deposited in large unbaked earthenware jars, which stood in the ground, and the small were stacked in heaps on slabs of stone laid flat on the earth. They tried to move the jars without emptying them, but the jars collapsed under the weight of their contents, and many tablets were broken by falling on the ground. . . . In one chamber they found rows of tablets lying on slabs, as if they had been arranged there in some special order.<sup>1</sup>

Fallen from these were small triangular inscribed labels which had been attached to them by fibrous cords. A very considerable number of carved cylinder-seals had been found among the tablets.

The informant was also greatly surprised to find Budge a little put out on hearing his story. He said:

Be not sad of heart for such a thing has never happened to any seeker for antikat before. We have all the tablets in Baghdad, we are all your friends, and we have kept the tablets for you. You will buy them and they shall go out of the country quickly, and you will be able to live with your English friends in Baghdad and not be obliged to sit in the desert with the jackals and the vultures, and burn by day and freeze by night. Besides, there are now many oranges in Baghdad.<sup>2</sup>

In comparison with the Wâli's spectacular success as an archaeologist, Budge's own modest excavations at Der were necessarily something of an anti-climax. In any case when he left Iraq for the last time a few weeks later the two groups of Der tablets, numbering 2,500 and 7,000 respectively, which he had purchased in Baghdad were by far the most formidable result of his third season.

The site of Der has once more received the attention of the local government in recent years under remarkably different circumstances. In 1941 it was one of the sites selected by the writer for the

<sup>1</sup> *ibid.* Vol. II, p. 268.

<sup>2</sup> *ibid.* p. 258.

## FOUNDATIONS IN THE DUST

training of Arab personnel attached to the Antiquities Department.<sup>1</sup> The exact stratification of the mounds was worked out from the surface to the original virgin soil and correlated with such dating-material as the tablets offered. At the same time a corpus of pottery and cylinder-seals was compiled ranging over a period of two thousand years. The site appears to represent a suburb of Sippar founded in the time of King Sargon of Akkad.

<sup>1</sup> cf. the Journal *Sumer*, Vol. I, No. 2.

## ETHICS AND METHOD

IN reading the foregoing chapters it would be possible to conclude that the entire preoccupation of western archaeologists in Mesopotamia in the last century consisted in looting valuable antiquities from the country and indigenous people to whom they rightfully belonged, by methods as damaging to the antiquities themselves as to the ancient monuments constituting the sources from which they were derived. Yet on closer examination this inference appears plainly ridiculous. It involves one in an argument by no means restricted to the sphere of antiquities, but embracing the immensely more extensive subject of colonial exploitation; a subject whose every aspect has in the past been so distorted by propaganda that it is scarcely any longer susceptible of judicial logic. It is a milieu where the simplest ethics have become so obscured by growth and change that a static judgement may provide a *casus belli*; where a son's guiding principles may be the antithesis of his father's most sacred conviction, without detriment to the regard of one for the other. To every ingenuous question there is a dusty answer. Did John Company interfere with the autonomous development of India? Did the Americans pay a fair price to the Indian who owned Manhattan? Were the Arab wars of conquest really wars of liberation? Were the Congo scandals a storm in a teacup? Did Balfour know there were any Arabs in Palestine? What benefits did Mussolini bring to Abyssinia? If the answers to these most poignant questions leave us still hot for certainties, the ground will be no safer in the straiter sphere of archaeology.

Mesopotamia in the nineteenth century was a neglected province of a decaying empire, for the most part shamefully administered by corrupt Ottoman officials. The Arab peoples of the country had reached so low an ebb that their rights were in abeyance and their traditions almost forgotten. For all the manly virtues which they inherited from their imperial ancestors, six centuries of oppression

## FOUNDATIONS IN THE DUST

had left them backward and ignorant. In the realm of antiquities, derived, after all, from what they had been taught to consider a heretical age, it would have been absurd to expect them to understand the value, intrinsic or otherwise, of these monuments which chance had located within their territory, let alone the necessity for their preservation. The Westerner, therefore, who considered the stones of Assyria a world-heritage could hardly be blamed for preferring to see them installed in a museum within reach of an epigraphist, rather than rotting in a mound where a chance rainstorm might leave them at the mercy of Arab gypsum-burners.

Up to the last years of the century and the appearance of individuals like Hamdi Bey, the Turks also had been equally indifferent to the fate of pre-Islamic monuments. Indeed, they had often enough opposed and obstructed the activities of Western excavators, but for the wrong reasons. Their opposition was almost always actuated by religious prejudice, personal spite or ordinary malice. Furthermore, this very opposition itself proved as great a detriment to the efficiency of the excavations as shortage of funds. The disabilities created by both circumstances were regrettable, but they inevitably serve to augment our admiration for the men whose patience and ingenuity rose superior to them. One would hardly have expected Layard to abandon his work at Nimrûd on the assumption that some future generation of archaeologists would be better equipped; nor would one have wished Botta to entrust the Khorsabad sculptures to the Pasha of Mosul in trust for an Iraq nation of the future. No logic or ethics of an age which they could not foresee must be allowed to detract from the human endeavour of these great explorers. Nevertheless, it is in some sense with a feeling of relief that one turns at this point to an entirely new phase in the history of archaeology. The end of the century in fact marked such a conspicuous epoch in the evolution of historical research that it must here be dwelt upon at some length.

In the first place, then, it should be unreservedly affirmed that the new development resulted from the appearance in the field of the first German archaeologists. Like their colleagues of other nationalities these new-comers were by no means averse to the discovery of removable antiquities for their museums or the acquisition of

texts for the benefit of the many German scholars who had followed Grotefend in the realm of Assyriology. Yet their main purpose was a new one, namely, the careful examination of the architectural and social setting from which such antiquities had hitherto been so heedlessly removed. We have already quoted Budge's significant admission<sup>1</sup> that no excavation had yet laid bare the *buildings* of a Babylonian town. To repair this omission was the Germans' first aim; their second was to elucidate for the first time the historical significance of stratification in Mesopotamian mounds. In the first thirteen years of the new century both aims were accomplished with a patience and methodical ingenuity which set an entirely new standard for the conduct of archaeological excavations in all parts of the world.

By far the greatest task which Dr. Koldewey and his colleagues set themselves was the final and definitive excavation of the ruins of Babylon, a work with which his expedition was preoccupied from March 1899 until a few months before the first world war. As we have seen, the Germans were by no means the first in the field at Babylon, and Koldewey himself modestly remarks:

It involves no depreciation of the labours of our predecessors when we say that they are superseded in almost every detail by the results of our many years of excavations, so far as the knowledge of the city ruins are concerned, and thus it would be hardly worth while to controvert expressly their numerous errors.<sup>2</sup>

The same fact will also perhaps help to excuse the rather brief reference in the preceding pages to these same earlier attempts on the site.

There is little to suggest that excavating technique among the Germans was not born fully-fledged. Presumably the following of baked brick walls, which presents little difficulty, led imperceptibly to a mastery of the far more difficult task of tracing sun-dried brick-work. It is, in any case, certain that by the end of their second season they had equipped themselves with a gang of skilled Arab wall-tracers whose descendants and successors have formed the

<sup>1</sup> See p. 188.

<sup>2</sup> R. Koldewey, *The Excavations at Babylon*, London 1914, p. ix.

## FOUNDATIONS IN THE DUST

nucleus of the workmen employed on almost every excavation from that day to this. Little difficulty was here presented by stratification, since buildings belonging to different occupational levels could usually be identified by the bricks inscribed with the names of their builders; but the recovery of architectural detail soon became a fine art, with the result that, by the time the work at Babylon was interrupted by the first rumours of war in Europe, the whole layout of the imperial city with its complicated fortifications, monumental gateways, procession-street, and almost every one of its principal buildings had been excavated or otherwise traced sufficiently to make a convincing and reliable reconstruction. Thus, in Budge's sense, the 'buildings were laid bare'; and yet to those who visit the site to-day the result is somewhat disappointing. Here are no tidy and comprehensible ruins, such as one sees in Greece or Egypt; for it is in the nature of mudbrick walls that their ruins, once exposed, cannot be preserved. As a result, the site to-day, save for the dominating outline of the more massive structures, whose sheer bulk had rendered them semi-indestructible, presents a scene of devastation almost as complete as when first discovered by European travellers.

The city which the Germans excavated dates largely from the time of the New Babylonian Empire (seventh to sixth centuries B.C.), and a great many of its monuments were the work of Nebuchadnezzar. Most of these fall within the area of the Inner City, which was traversed north to south by the *Via Sacra* of Babylonian ceremonial. This street was elevated twelve and a half metres above plain-level and paved with slabs of red and white marble nearly a metre square. The walls which flanked it on either side and whose foundations penetrated deep into the ruins of earlier cities, were faced with bricks glazed in bright colours and ornamented with a triple frieze of heraldic animals in relief (bulls, lions, and dragons). In the centre of the town it skirted the east wall of the great temple-enclosure, E-temen-anki, and, turning westwards beyond it, spanned the Euphrates on a fine arched bridge and passed on into the western quarter of the city. E-temen-anki, with its high *ziggurat*, shares with Birs Nimrod the honour of possibly representing the Biblical tower of Babel. The tower itself was seventy-five metres high, with a triple staircase, and receded in a succession of stages or storeys.

## ETHICS AND METHOD

According to an almost contemporary inscription, the uppermost storey was adorned with six sanctuaries consecrated to various gods, though this did not accord with the dimensions assumed by the excavators. Almost every brick of its structure was quarried away by the builders of Hillah after the Germans departed, and nothing is now left but a reedy lake of water in a deep depression.

At its north end, where the procession-street passed through the double fortification of the Inner City, was the famous Ishtar Gate, with its double portals flanked by gigantic towers. This, too, was covered with shining glaze and ornamented with five hundred and seventy-five bulls and dragons. A hundred and fifty-two of these figures remained intact in their original positions, and sufficient was preserved of the remaining structure for its original appearance to be more than a matter of conjecture. The Germans therefore took upon themselves the task of removing the surviving ornament, and incorporating it in a full-size reconstruction of the gate in the Berlin Museum. Since the number of conspicuous *objets d'art* produced by the whole of their thirteen years' excavations could practically be counted on the fingers of one hand, this decision was perfectly understandable.

The subsequent fate of these Ishtar Gate decorations is in itself symptomatic of the new ethic in the realm of excavation. When Koldewey left for home in 1917 the six hundred and forty-nine cases containing the bricks were left stored in the German expedition-house at Hillah, and, on the establishment of the new government, came under the charge of Gertrude Bell, who, as Oriental Secretary to Sir Percy Cox, had assumed responsibility for constituting an antiquities service. There they remained intact until 1926, when, in conformity with the newly-established Antiquities Law, their release to the German Government was sanctioned, in exchange for representative examples of the restored panels and two magnificent models of the city of Babylon which now adorn the Iraq and Babylon museums. The remainder of the cases reached Berlin in 1927.

Babylon was not the only site where the success of the German excavators made the efforts of their predecessors appear ineffectual. The Assyrian site of Ashur was also excavated almost continuously

## FOUNDATIONS IN THE DUST

from 1902 to 1914, mainly under the direction of Dr. Walter Andrae.<sup>1</sup> This first capital of the embryo nation, dating from the time when it was no more than a city-state, was in those days most picturesquely set on a spur of rock surrounded on two sides by the waters of the Tigris. It was heavily fortified and crowned by at least three *ziggurats*, including *E-harsag-kurkurra*, 'The Great Mountain and House of all Lands'. Here, also, the Germans traced out the walls of houses and temples of the city; but they also made a new and extremely important experiment. Selecting a major building, the Temple of Ishtar, consort of the city's patron-god, Ashur, they carried down its excavation through the ruins of half a dozen earlier temples to an original archaic shrine dating from the days when Assyria was a tiny province on the borders of prosperous Sumer.

It was a brilliant feat of excavating, and the prototype of all stratigraphical investigations in later times. It involved the tracing, clearing, photographing, and planning of every building in turn, before clearing away its ruins and attending to its predecessor. Its reward and justification was the discovery of the Archaic Temple buried beneath the deeply accumulated evidence of its great antiquity, and providing for the first time detailed evidence of Sumerian religious rites and the paraphernalia connected with them in its original setting.

During the years the Germans worked at Babylon and Ashur, expeditions were still being sponsored by institutions of other nationalities. Americans at Bismayah, the 'Lost City of Adab', were intelligently emulating German methods.<sup>2</sup> The French at Kish<sup>3</sup> and elsewhere had yet made little concession to progressive tendencies. King, representing the British Museum at Kuyunjik, may at least be given credit for being the first to suspect a pre-Assyrian settlement there. But all this work was secondary in importance compared with the strong line of scientific development apparent in the activities of the *Deutsch-Orient Gesellschaft*. If any reservation is to be

<sup>1</sup> Described in *Mitteilungen der Deutsch-Orient Gesellschaft*, No. 20, 1903 et seq. and *Wissenschaftliche Veröffentlichungen der Deutsch-Orient Gesellschaft*, OS. 23, 24, 39.

<sup>2</sup> E. J. Banks, *Bismaya, or the Lost City of Adab*.

<sup>3</sup> H. de Genouillac, *Premières Recherches Archéologiques à Kish*.

## ETHICS AND METHOD

made in praising the Germans, it is in connexion with the public presentation of their results. Total preoccupation with scientific minutiae robbed their writings of all but academic appeal, and the educative potential of their work suffered accordingly. Any layman who has attempted to interest himself in the German reports is likely to agree with Koldewey when he himself admits:

The gradual progress of the excavations, important and stimulating as it is for the explorers, appears of less interest to those who take little share in it.<sup>1</sup>

About the end of the first decade of the twentieth century it seemed to occur simultaneously to individuals and institutions of several nationalities that the ruins and monuments of the pre-Islamic age in Mesopotamia were by no means the only ones which merited the attention of scholars and antiquarians. In the years 1907-8 the French<sup>2</sup> took the initiative in making a serious examination of early Moslem and medieval remains, and by 1909 no less than four separate parties might have been found travelling around the country exploring and carefully recording the ruins and ancient buildings of these later periods. Conrad Preusser, a member of the Babylon expedition, was busy photographing and planning Christian churches and lesser-known Moslem shrines.<sup>3</sup> Sarre and Herzfeld<sup>4</sup> were making an even more productive journey of exploration down the Euphrates and up the Tigris, visiting among other famous Islamic sites the ruins of Sâmarra, where Herzfeld later excavated. The Czech geographer, Alois Musil, was making an elaborate topographical study of the Middle Euphrates and Al Jasîrah.<sup>5</sup> And finally, Gertrude Bell had embarked on the journey of exploration

<sup>1</sup> Koldewey, *The Excavations at Babylon*, Preface.

<sup>2</sup> See L. Massignon, *Mission en Mesopotamie*, 2 Vols., Cairo 1910-12.

<sup>3</sup> C. Preusser, *Nordmesopotamische Baudenkmäler Alichristlicher und Islamischer Zeit*, Leipzig 1911.

<sup>4</sup> F. Sarre and E. Herzfeld, *Archäologische Reiseim Euphrat-und Tigris-Gebiet*, 4 Vols., Berlin 1911-20.

<sup>5</sup> Musil's publication (*The Middle Euphrates*, New York 1927) is only marred by a grotesque system of transliterating Arabic names. His collection of classical and Arabic references, etc., is immensely useful.

## FOUNDATIONS IN THE DUST

referred to in an earlier chapter, and afterwards described in *Amurath to Amurath*.<sup>1</sup>

It is greatly to Gertrude Bell's credit that during her travels in 1909 her sensitive understanding of the peoples with whom she was associated enabled her to recognize the first stirrings of what has later come to be known as the 'Arab Awakening'. All through their centuries of repression, the Arabs had preserved at least a sense of their own unity. They remained a community, speaking one language, descended—partly, at least—from the same ancestors and living a traditional life inherited from a common civilization. The advent of missionaries with printing presses and the improvement of education had in the end something to do with reviving their national consciousness, and political nationalism was an early symptom of their cultural renaissance.

The early impression which Gertrude Bell received of the great change which was taking place in the Arab world is well described by her in a letter to Lord Cromer. She says:

And yet there was a new note. For the first time in all the turbulent centuries to which those desolate regions bear witness, a potent word had gone forth, and those who had caught it listened in amazement, asking one another for an explanation of its meaning. Liberty—what is liberty? I think the question which ran so perpetually through the black tents would have received no better a solution in the royal pavilions which had once spread their glories over the plain. Idly though it fell from the lips of the Bedouin, it foretold change. That sense of change, uneasy and bewildered, hung over the whole of the Ottoman Empire; it was rarely unalloyed with anxiety; there was, it must be admitted, little to encourage an unqualified confidence in the immediate future. But one thing was certain; the moving Finger had inscribed a fresh title upon the page.<sup>2</sup>

Writing in 1910 Gertrude Bell could not have foreseen the form which the first step in the Arab *risorgimento* would take five years later, nor the considerable part which she was to play in it herself. When in 1917 a British-Indian army occupied Baghdad and General

<sup>1</sup> G. L. Bell, *Amurath to Amurath*. It was on this journey that Miss Bell made the study of Al 'Ukhaidir afterwards published separately.

<sup>2</sup> Ibid. Preface.

## ETHICS AND METHOD

Maude's famous speech announced to the people Great Britain's support for the 'aspirations of their Race', she was still serving on the 'Arab Bureau' in Cairo, which contributed so much to the corresponding liberation of the Levant States. A few years later she herself returned to Iraq as Oriental Secretary to the first British High Commissioner.

The situation in regard to the proper preservation of antiquities under the new régime had become a matter of discussion within a few months of the occupation, and on Miss Bell's arrival it was at once clear that no one could be better equipped than she to assume the responsibility of creating an Antiquities Service based on the inauguration of a national collection, and to advise on the legislation required for the purpose. The newly formed department was accordingly placed in her charge, and both it and the embryo museum were temporarily accommodated in a single modest room in the Sarai. Miss Bell thus became Iraq's first Director of Antiquities and simultaneously the founder of the Iraq Museum.

The decision to regularize and exactly prescribe the conduct of archaeological excavations came by no means too soon. Even before the signing of the 1918 armistice the British Museum already had a representative in the field. This was R. Campbell Thompson, who had worked at Nineveh before the war and now once more found himself serving in Iraq as a Captain in the Intelligence Corps. During 1918 he made some not very effectual soundings both at Ur (Tell Muqayyar) and twenty miles further south at Abu Shahrain, the Biblical Eridu and site of a famous Sumerian shrine, both of which had last received the attentions of Taylor in 1853-4.<sup>1</sup> Thompson used Indian troops to do the actual digging, whereas H. R. Hall, who succeeded him at Ur the following year, obtained for this purpose the services of seventy Turkish war-prisoners. Hall's rather tentative work at Ur was much less important than his discovery some miles away at Al 'Ubaid of a small temple platform—clearly the Sumerian prototype of the later *ziggurats* and contemporary with the archaic Ishtar Temple at Ashur. The fine architectural embellish-

<sup>1</sup> See above, p. 164. Thompson's soundings were published in the *Journal of the Royal Asiatic Society*, Vol. XV and *Archaeologia*, Vol. 70.

## FOUNDATIONS IN THE DUST

ments fallen from the façade of the now vanished shrine included the great copper lintel ornamented with stags heads and the lion-bird, Im-dugud. In the absence as yet of any definite regulation, they were divided between the British Museum and Gertrude Bell's new national collection. Funds grew short after this, and it was not until 1922 that an expedition, now representing the combined resources of the British Museum and the University Museum of Pennsylvania, returned to Ur under the directorship of C. L. (now Sir Leonard) Woolley. This may be said to have inaugurated the great archaeological revival of the twenties and early thirties.

The law which from now onwards governed the affairs of excavators, though it owed something to Turkish regulations conceived twenty-five years earlier by Hamdi Bey, was entirely in keeping with the new political identity of the state. Foreign expeditions were not permitted to operate in the country unless constituted on prescribed lines and including certain experts such as an epigraphist, an architect and a competent photographer. A party thus constituted might obtain an excavating permit for a single site whose exact limits were previously determined, and which could then be excavated only in a manner judged by the Director of Antiquities to be in keeping with the most improved and up-to-date methods. All movable finds were to be numbered and registered, and although all antiquities, movable or otherwise, were in the first place the property of the state, at the end of a season's work a representative collection of objects would be assigned to the excavator in recompense for his pains and expense. The remainder would be added to the national collection.

The administration of this law presented few difficulties and it remained in force a dozen years without serious criticism except from the most irresponsible quarters. True, an equitable division of finds at the end of a season called for the most uncompromising integrity on the part of the director and corresponding forbearance among the excavators. Gertrude Bell in fact describes in one of her letters with what reluctance she found herself often compelled in the 'divisions', to relieve an excavator of some of his most cherished discoveries. Yet on the whole the archaeologists were satisfied and the size and wealth of the national collection increased at a prodigious speed without effort or expenditure on the part of the nation.

## ETHICS AND METHOD

By 1932, when the mandate ended, there were eleven expeditions of five different nationalities operating in the country simultaneously. The museum was now housed in a fairly large building, and the Department of Antiquities, now under the care of Mr. Sidney Smith,<sup>1</sup> had been augmented by the addition of several new services, such as a library, photographic section and laboratory to cope with the care and preservation of the now considerable stream of antiquities arriving from the field.

Any attempt here to summarize the work of the various institutions and individuals, who contributed to the total of archaeological discovery between wars, would risk deteriorating into a mere catalogue. It would also mean largely duplicating an account given by the writer in a previous work.<sup>2</sup> It will therefore be more interesting to consider the period as a whole, and observe the shifting trend in historical interest, as well as some striking new steps in the evolution of method and practice.

If one exception should be made to this ruling it is in the case of Sir Leonard Woolley's discovery of the 'Royal Cemetery' at Ur, which captured the public imagination more than any similar event since Howard Carter's Egyptian find.

Arriving for the first time at Tell Muqayyar in 1922, Woolley's party found their nearest point of contact with civilization to be a small station known as Ur-Junction on the Baghdad-Basrah railway, having a branch line leading to Nâsiriyah, some miles to the east. Both the ruined *ziggurat* at Ur and the tiny temple-platform at Al 'Ubaid are in fact visible from the train window. The site to-day is separated from the Persian Gulf by more than a hundred miles of desert and marshes, and it is difficult to imagine it in Sumerian times as a prosperous harbour-town. Yet this was what Woolley found it to have been. His early investigations revealed a fortified city covering about four square miles of country, with quays for shipping running far in among the buildings. For the rest it was occupied by streets and the houses of ordinary Sumerian citizens, except for a great walled enclosure in the centre, which contained most of its

<sup>1</sup> Now Keeper of the Department of Egyptian and Babylonian Antiquities in the British Museum.

<sup>2</sup> Seton Lloyd, *Mesopotamia. Excavations on Sumerian Sites*. London 1936.

## FOUNDATIONS IN THE DUST

temples and other public buildings. The houses themselves were so exactly like those of a small town in Iraq to-day—say, for instance, Najaf—that if one could see air photographs of both they would be almost indistinguishable, except, of course, for the character of the religious buildings in the centre. Possibly one of the only differences was that at Ur doorways were usually arched owing to the shortage of wood for making lintels, and the rooms were narrower owing to having no steel beams. The Sumerians often buried their dead beneath the floors of their houses, and Woolley found several houses which had evidently become so full of graves that the living inhabitants had had to move.

There is also no need to say much about the daily life of the Sumerians at home, as illustrated by their private possessions which remained in the ruined houses—again because almost every domestic detail exactly resembled those which characterize the life of Iraqi peasants to-day. They had the same domestic animals, ate the same food cooked in the same way, slept on the same bedding and bought their provisions in the same sort of market.

Woolley excavated almost the whole of the temple-enclosure, and the evidence which it provided of Sumerian public life was most remarkable. By far the most conspicuous building was, of course, the *ziggurat*. Many times rebuilt and improved, its triple staircase was still sufficiently well-preserved to be partially restored, and the artificial-mountain theory was here confirmed by evidence which Woolley found suggesting that its upper terraces had been adorned with quite large trees.

Actually the whole ritual purpose of the *ziggurat* was by that time beginning to become much more clear owing to the light thrown upon it by newly deciphered Sumerian religious texts, as well as scenes represented on cylinder-seals and carved reliefs. It appeared that the small shrine at the summit of the tower was used mostly at the great New Year's festival connected with the irrigation of the land and the fertility of the crops. One imagines a long procession of priests and notables winding its way up the *ziggurat*, from the summit of which one could see the smoke of sacrifices rising from other shrines just visible across the wide expanse of cultivated plain, where the same ceremony was being performed. Each year a new

## ETHICS AND METHOD

priest and priestess were chosen to symbolize the principles of fertility in a *hieros gamos* which was the climax of the ceremony. After it was over they were perhaps considered to have no further part in ordinary human life and were themselves consequently sacrificed. It has been suggested, and is by no means improbable, that it was the graves of these unfortunate people which Woolley discovered in the neighbouring cemetery five thousand years later. At the time they were provisionally referred to as 'kings' and 'queens', though no royal titles adorned their names.<sup>1</sup>

The cemetery was first excavated in the winter season of 1926. It lay just outside the walls of the inner city, and the graves were dug down into the accumulated rubbish heaps of previous generations. The more important tombs were rectangular chambers built of stone rubble, either vaulted or, in some cases, covered with genuine domes, which in themselves were a remarkable thing to find at such an early date. It is also interesting that out of the scores of these which appeared, only a few had escaped the attention of tomb-robbers in ancient times, and the first one which came to light was one of many which contained nothing but a few broken fragments of gold leaf littered about the floor. The first undisturbed tomb was that of some great lady whose name will never be known. A square shaft led to it from the surface, and about half-way down in the filling Woolley found the magnificent gold dagger and gold cylinder-seal of a prince (*lugal*) called Mes-kalam-dug, who had evidently flung them into the shaft as it was being filled, in a gesture of farewell. When the tomb itself was reached, the diggers experienced one of those thrills which the archaeologist of to-day shares with the tomb-robbers of other times. Woolley says:

The vault had been built over a centring of stout wooden beams which ran right through the stonework, and their decay had left half a dozen holes, through which one could glimpse parts of the dim interior and by the light of electric torches, could even see on the floor below the shapes of green copper vessels and catch an occasional gleam of gold.<sup>2</sup>

There proved to be five bodies within, four of which were those

<sup>1</sup> The 'royalty' or otherwise of the tombs, indeed, still remains *sub judice*.

<sup>2</sup> C. L. Woolley, *Ur of the Chaldees*, London 1929, p. 70.

## FOUNDATIONS IN THE DUST

of male servants sacrificed as part of the ritual of burial. The fifth was that of the lady herself, wearing a gold headdress and holding a fluted gold tumbler to her lips. But it remained for an adjoining pair of tombs to give the first real impression of the grim ceremony which accompanied this kind of funeral. This next pair were identified by inscribed cylinder-seals, which they contained, as a man and woman called Abargi and Shubad, who, as we have said, were at the time presumed to be a king and queen. First Abargi had been buried in a single vaulted chamber. In front of its door was a rectangular open shaft with a ramp leading down to it, and this was filled with the bodies of guards and attendants sacrificed so that they might accompany Abargi into the after-world. Some of the soldiers wore copper helmets and carried spears or daggers. One had a bundle of spears with gold heads and another, silver ones. The women attendants seem to have been more nearly court ladies than servants. Nine of them wore elaborate head-dresses of lapis lazuli and carnelian beads, 'Spanish combs' in silver and gold, necklaces, and bracelets. There were also two four-wheeled wagons with the bones of the oxen which drew them still between the shafts and those of the drivers beside them. Amongst the other bodies lay many striking objects, such as two enormous harps heavily inlaid and decorated with bulls' heads in gold and lapis. Inside the actual vaulted tomb there was very little left, since it had been plundered in antiquity. How this had happened was explained when Woolley investigated the neighbouring tomb of Shubad.

Shubad's vault was built beside that of Abargi, but in this case the 'death pit' with its human sacrifices was situated above and extended over the vault of the tomb next door. The workmen digging the shaft had encountered the stonework of Abargi's tomb and evidently could not resist breaking into it and rifling its contents. Afterwards the hole in the floor of the 'death pit' was concealed by placing over it a great wooden chest containing all Shubad's clothes.

The array of skeletons in Shubad's tomb was very impressive indeed. There were five soldiers, ten court ladies, and a beautifully decorated chariot, this time pulled by two wild asses. There were even traces of their harness and a copper rein-ring through which

## ETHICS AND METHOD

the reins had passed surmounted by a charming little figure of a donkey in gold alloy. Here also there were interesting objects evidently in everyday use at the time—inlaid gaming boards, tools such as chisels and saws and a long gold tube such as was used for drinking wine out of a deep jar. There was a great pile of offerings—mostly consisting of eating and drinking vessels made of gold, silver, copper, or coloured stone. In this case the vault itself was undisturbed and more valuable objects lay about inside it. A list of them really reads very much like the catalogue in an auction at Christie's:

A set of silver vessels consisting of a shallow platter, a jug with tall neck and long spout and a number of slender silver tumblers nested one inside the other.

A similar tumbler in gold, fluted and chased, with a fluted feeding bowl, a chalice and a plain oval bowl.

Two magnificent lions' heads in silver.

The head of a cow in silver.

Two silver tables for offerings.

Silver lamps and two pairs of imitation cockle-shells in gold, each containing different cosmetics,

and so on. Two female attendants were beside the bier on which the queen herself lay in all her finery, holding the gold cup to her lips. In addition to the elaborate headdress reconstructed in the British Museum, she had with her a spare diadem made of white leather covered with lapis beads and supporting a row of little gold animals—gazelles, bulls, goats, etc., and a fringe of gold leaves.

In the third and largest 'death pit' the ritual sacrifices had assumed the proportions of a massacre. The bodies of six men-servants and no less than sixty-eight women were laid in regular rows across the floor—the heads of one row lying on the legs of the next. Out of this shambles one little human detail emerged. One of the maids-in-waiting had been late for her own funeral. Having no time to put on her silver hair-ribbon like the rest, she pushed it still rolled up into her pocket, where Woolley found it five thousand years later.

Most of the other expeditions which came to Iraq during these early years after the first world war were equally preoccupied with

## FOUNDATIONS IN THE DUST

Sumerian remains. The *Deutsch-Orient Gesellschaft* had obtained a concession for the final excavation of Warka and were meticulously planning Sumerian and pre-Sumerian temples. The French at Kish had a Sumerian palace and cemetery, and Americans at Farah (ancient Shuruppak), buildings of the same period. In 1929 James Henry Breasted's Oriental Institute of Chicago, which owed its creation to the generosity of J. D. Rockefeller, Jr., extended its new field activities to Iraq. A concession was first obtained for the completion of Botta and Place's work at Khorsabad, but in 1931 this was extended to a group of Sumerian cities in the Diyalah area east of Baghdad. Under the very able direction of Dr. H. Frankfort, Sumerian shrines at Tell Asmar, Khafâjah, and Tell Ajrab were soon yielding a great volume of sculpture, nothing like which had been seen since the Gudea statues from Lagash astonished the art world half a century before.

But while all this excavating was in progress, archaeologists were again occupied with the problem of origins. Who were these Sumerians, and what was the background of their precocious ingenuity? Was their culture evolved in south Iraq from the beginning, or was it imported from elsewhere during some early migration. Following the German example at Ashur, it therefore became the fashion, when a Sumerian building had been excavated, planned and properly recorded, to sink a shaft beneath it, penetrating stage by stage through the accumulated debris of earlier occupations, until eventually the original clean soil of the delta was reached. Each stage produced characteristic pottery and other evidence to distinguish it from that above and below, and when the soundings of this sort at Ur, Warka, Kish, and elsewhere were compared, they showed a most striking similarity. In every case three distinct phases could be recognized among the relics of the pre- or proto-Sumerians. All three phases had sufficient features in common to suggest a continuous and almost uninterrupted evolution, but they were conveniently distinguishable, particularly owing to their contemporary fashions of decorating pottery.

In the first phase a greenish pottery was used with rather beautiful designs in black paint. In the second, all painted decoration disappeared and shiny burnished vessels were used, while in the third,

## ETHICS AND METHOD

paint returned with elaborate geometric designs in two colours.

But, meanwhile, these simple shaft-soundings were not enough to teach one more than a very little about the people who used the pottery. So the next logical stage in the investigation was to take each phase in turn and look for the site of a village or town dating from that period and never again occupied afterwards. This proved to be possible.

First of all Sir Leonard Woolley discovered that the site of Al 'Ubaid, where Hall had unearthed his Sumerian temple, actually represented a settlement or village corresponding to phase one. Here the first arrivals in south Iraq had built themselves reed-huts on the fertile islands which were beginning to appear in the marshes of the drying delta. Everywhere among their huts he found the greenish pottery with the black designs, which had sufficiently close parallels with pottery found at sites like Susa, in the Persian mountains, to suggest that the people who made it had descended into Iraq from the Iranian highlands. So phase one, for want of a better name, came to be called after the little mound—Al 'Ubaid.

Meanwhile, the Germans, who were working at Warka on the other side of the Euphrates, had found a part of their site where phase two was represented by buildings on the surface. So phase two came to be known as the Uruk Period (Uruk being the more correct spelling of the Biblical Erech). The culture which these buildings represented showed a most definite advance on Woolley's marsh-dwellers of phase one, who seemed now to be enriched by an influx of new people from Anatolia. For one thing, fine temples were now built of mud-brick and decorated with a peculiar kind of mosaic. Writing appears for the first time, and primitive pictographs are inscribed with a stylus on clay tablets and signed with a carved cylinder-seal. Also there is the beginnings of relief-sculpture in which the fully-fledged Sumerians afterwards excelled.

Finally, Professor Langdon of Oxford found a site near Kish called Jamdat Nâsr, where phase three was represented on the surface by a temple and graves containing painted jars with distinctive geometrical designs in two colours, which again seemed to suggest a second immigration from Persia. Here the arts of building, sculpture, and writing were yet further advanced, and the stage was

## FOUNDATIONS IN THE DUST

almost completely set for the beginnings of the Sumerian dynasties.

There appeared to be no definite point in the sequence described above, at which it could be said that characteristically Sumerian culture first arrived. The elements of it were in fact already to be detected among the marsh-dwellers of the Al 'Ubaid phase, and it seemed likely that it was among them that it had first begun to crystallize. It could thus be said that the evolution of our precociously cultured Sumerians was parallel to and contemporary with the first appearance of the alluvial plain, which is now south Iraq, from beneath the receding head of the Persian Gulf during the fourth millennium B.C.

And so in the late nineteen-thirties the search for origins continued—no longer in south Iraq, because it had now been carried back to a period when the sea reached to a point many miles north of modern Baghdad. So interest was next focused on sites in the Mosul area. One of the first fruits of the renewed investigation was the discovery of a new and brilliant painted-pottery culture, which extended from the Tigris westwards to the Mediterranean long before 4000 B.C. This was called Tell Halaf, because it was first found by Baron Max von Oppenheim in a mound of that name near the source of the Khabûr river. The beautiful polychrome vessels which were made at this period were now found by the British Museum at Arpachiyah near Nineveh and by Americans at Tepe Gawra beyond Khorsabad. And still it was clear, from the very advanced degree of civilization which went with it, that one was still nowhere near the beginning.

In 1931 Campbell Thompson, who was now working for the British Museum at Nineveh, decided to make a determined effort to find something earlier. Starting beneath the foundations of an Assyrian temple in the centre of the Kuyunjik mound, he proceeded to dig a deep shaft from the surface down to virgin soil. From this shaft, as he descended stage by stage, came pottery, cylinder-seals, beads, and even sculpture representing all the successive phases of Iraq's history. Passing through the Assyrian, Babylonian, Akkadian and Sumerian periods he reached the phases three, two, and one pottery of the south, and beneath it the brilliantly decorated jars of Tell Halaf. By this time he was seventy feet beneath the surface, and the shaft, which had started fairly large, had gradually been

## ETHICS AND METHOD

reduced by the spiral staircase round it to an inadequate little pit about two metres square. So that all he was able to recover from the two or three metres remaining above virgin soil was a handful of potsherds decorated with peculiar scratched designs never before seen, and from 1931 until 1943 these eleven sherds remained the only clue to the culture of the earliest-known villagers of Iraq.

As has already been explained, the above is only the briefest possible summary of the trend of archaeological research in Iraq between wars. No reference has been made to those expeditions whose investigations were concerned with periods outside the main stream of historical research—Americans, for instance, at Khorsabad, exploring a great walled area of temples and public buildings, undetected by Botta and Place; at Tell 'Omar, excavating the capital of the Seleucid Emperors—these and others have been most adequately recorded elsewhere and would over-complicate the theme of this narrative. One must turn rather to examine a most striking characteristic now at last observable in the work of all these expeditions, namely, the perfection of scientific method.

A good example of the conscientious respect with which ancient sites were now treated by the new generation of archaeologists, is afforded by Sir Leonard Woolley's approach to the excavation of Ur. It is a little known fact that he first discovered the famous Royal Cemetery within a few weeks of starting to dig in 1922. That it was not actually excavated until four years later was due entirely to his professional scruples. As he says himself:

In the first place our diggers were raw and clumsy, and for the clearing of a cemetery skilled labour is essential; again we were ourselves new to the country and had not had time to secure proper influence over the men, for whom the temptation of small gold objects was irresistible. . . . But the decisive argument for postponing work on the graves was this; very little indeed was known of Mesopotamian archaeology, so little that the objects from these graves were vaguely dated by such authorities as I could consult to the Neo-Babylonian, or, as more probable, to the Persian period, and though I could form no alternative theory I felt that this was doubtful in the extreme. . . . The more rich the cemetery

## FOUNDATIONS IN THE DUST

promised to be, the more necessary was it to leave it alone until external evidence had given us a more or less definite chronology.<sup>1</sup>

By 1926, when the excavation of the Sumerian graves was finally undertaken, all this had changed. Woolley had by that time adapted his already considerable knowledge of excavating technique to the peculiar conditions of Mesopotamia, and was able to treat the fragile contents of the graves with the extreme delicacy and ingenuity which they called for. His skilled workmen, with the remarkable versatility characteristic of some Arabs, had quickly mastered the intricate processes of preservation with wax and plaster, and under the supervision of Woolley himself and his brilliantly competent Syrian foreman, were equal to the almost unbelievable feats of craftsmanship which were required of them. A complete and elaborate female head-dress of gold and precious stones could be removed from the crushed skull which it covered, without disturbing the arrangement of the gold ornaments or the order of the beads. Alternatively the whole head with its adornment still in place, could be removed intact on a bed of plaster and subsequently exhibited in a museum. A gigantic harp, whose skeleton and sounding-box had completely perished, leaving only the thousands of fragments of coloured mosaic with which it was ornamented, could be preserved without losing the shape or pattern, and if necessary reconstructed. In one case such a harp, ornamented only with a copper bull's head and one mosaic panel, had completely perished; yet the impression which it had left in the ground could be filled with liquid plaster and the exact shape thus recovered.

These random examples are perhaps enough to suggest the skill required in the new-style excavating. The dating of the graves had already largely been established by an equally ingenious process of linking archaeological data and inscriptions.

Woolley's painstaking research and methodical recording were all the more creditable in view of the somewhat inadequate financial backing which such expeditions sometimes received. Unfortunately, it was still a characteristic of most European institutions that they appeared to grudge every penny beyond the absolute minimum

<sup>1</sup> Woolley, *Ur Excavations II. The Royal Cemetery*, London 1934, p. 6.

## ETHICS AND METHOD

necessary to keep their expeditions in the field. Even this was sometimes only made possible by an additional vote from some generous private individual. The result was a tradition, particularly in English camps, of personal austerity and discomfort, as the only alternative to over-economy and improvisation in the actual field work. In the early nineteen-thirties this circumstance was sharply emphasized by the arrival in the field of better equipped and more heavily subsidized expeditions sponsored by the richer American universities. Notable among these was Chicago's Oriental Institute, which was now engaged in establishing a chain of elaborate research stations throughout the Near and Middle East. In a changing world, James Henry Breasted's conception for the institute of which he had become director was, to say the least of it, abreast of the times. It accorded with and even anticipated improvements in communications and security which were then beginning to appear and have since more completely materialized. These excavating establishments need no longer be envisaged as groups of intrepid explorers braving the perils and hardships of a savage country in the cause of science. They were to be research centres of Western character, established in these countries with the collaboration and protection of the local government. There seemed no reason to suppose that their efficiency would be impaired by provision of the equipment and amenities enjoyed by similar institutions in America. Chicago House at Luxor, with its quiet library and gardens, became a pleasant outpost of the academic world, as well as an ideal setting for deliberate research. At Megiddo, a kite balloon was used for accurate vertical photography, while at Tell Asmar, forty miles east of Baghdad, a desert station with fully equipped photographic studio and laboratory provided a centre for the excavation of a whole group of most productive Sumerian sites, a score of miles from the nearest modern settlement.

It may well be imagined that such new-fangled developments in the field caused some raising of eyebrows in circles where vocational austerity was still the order of the day. This was matched among the Americans by a sort of diffident incomprehension. In fact, the lean and bearded figure of the traditional archaeologist with his field-boots and solar topee, was, to the new generation, no less incongruous a figure than that which the hatless and bare-kneed American

## FOUNDATIONS IN THE DUST

presented to the elderly French or German professor. There is little doubt, however, that each generation in the end came to learn something from the other, and that the archaeologist of the future will benefit from the experience of both.

Certainly no one could have accused the Chicago excavators in Iraq of failing in patience or neglecting any device, however intricate, for recovering scientific information. At Khafâjah, one of the Diyalah sites, a flat area of ground rising only a few feet above the plain was found to represent the remnants of an important Sumerian temple. It was built of the small, irregular mud-bricks associated with the early dynasties, but its ruins had been so eroded by wind and water that the greater part of the buildings remained standing only two brick-courses high. Mr. P. Delougaz, who was in charge of this section of the Tell Asmar excavations, decided that in order to recover the plan, it would be necessary to articulate every single brick, in a manner which the Germans had found effective at Warka. This great labour was cheerfully undertaken with no prospect of compensation in the form of removable objects. In itself, however, it was entirely successful. A group of Arab craftsmen were employed in the very delicate process of chipping away the dried-mud surface covering the bricks. The chips themselves had to be removed by blowing; and for this purpose Delougaz installed portable cylinders of compressed air. Gradually the pattern of the bricks gave the outline of walls, and the walls formed themselves into buildings. By the end of the second season's work, a complete and remarkable plan had been recovered.<sup>1</sup>

Approached by a staircase on one side was a square platform upon whose summit the principal shrine must have stood. Before it was a wide courtyard filled with pedestals for offerings and curious ritual water-basins. Grouped around this was accommodation of various sorts for the priests, and the whole precinct was enclosed and protected by a double fortification of buttressed walls, arranged in a perfect oval. As has already been said, no single part of these buildings remained standing more than a few inches above the ground; yet, save in one point where the trial trench of an earlier excavator had cut through the brickwork without detecting them,

<sup>1</sup> See Delougaz, *The Temple Oval at Khafâjah*, Chicago 1940, frontispiece.

every scrap of information which they were able to afford was successfully recovered. In the end the process of cleaning had become so skilful and meticulous that, in the courtyard before the shrine, Delougaz was able to reveal and photograph footmarks of men and animals. At one point, even, one could detect the imprint left in the mud five thousand years ago by the hoofs of a large ram, and the slipping feet of a herdsman trying to restrain him.

A more practical result of this investigation was to follow. Noticing the close similarity between the remnants of the square platform inside the Khafâjah Oval and that of the contemporary Nin-Harsag Temple, which Hall found at Al 'Ubaid in 1918, Delougaz undertook a short re-examination of the latter site. After a few days' work, with his team of skilled men, he was able to trace out an oval enclosure-wall almost exactly resembling his own at Khafâjah.<sup>1</sup> Clearly such work as this would be impossible without ample time and sufficient funds, nor would it be practicable for an excavator seeking a maximum of portable antiquities. It is quoted here as a justification, if any be needed, of the American standards of research. May one not be allowed to hope that foundations such as the Oriental Institute will, if necessary, survive even the private fortunes which endowed them.

<sup>1</sup> Delougaz in the journal *Iraq*, Vol. V, Part 1, Spring 1938.

## *Chapter Fourteen*

### EPILOGUE

SO, in the final years before the second world war, the work of foreign excavators in Iraq came temporarily to an end. Sir Leonard Woolley's little expedition house at Ur had been closed since 1932. In 1934 Dr. Parrot's party of scientists from the Louvre, on the point of transferring their activities from Telloh to ancient Larsa, were diverted to Tell Harîri in Syria, where the ruins of Mari had revealed an astonishing outpost of Sumerian culture. Mallowan, too, after his brilliant discoveries at Arpachiyah, had moved the British Museum camp across the frontier to the Khabûr district, while in 1937 the Chicago Institute, now committed to a term of laborious and costly publication, had relinquished their one remaining concession at Khafâjah to Pennsylvania. After a final season both there and at Tepe Gawra, the University Museum also abandoned the field. Last of all, in the spring of 1939 the Germans at Warka packed up their camp with an air not so much of finality as of confident anticipation that they would return under new conditions.

All this might indeed have meant the total suspension of archaeological work in Iraq for an indefinite number of years; but it was not, as it proved, to be so. Soon after the termination of the Mandate and Iraq's admission to the League of Nations as an independent state, Mr. Sidney Smith, who, as Director of Antiquities, had already contributed some years of conscientious work to the welfare of the Department, was recalled to England to replace the late Dr. H. R. Hall in the British Museum. His place was taken by Saty Beg al-Hasri, an ex-minister in the Arab Government and a well-known educational authority. Subject to the advice of Dr. Julius Jordan, one of the excavators of Babylon and Warka, Saty Beg remained in charge of the Department of Antiquities until 1941. During these years great strides were made in increasing its scope beyond the limited functions of a purely administrative body, and the educational

## EPILOGUE

potentialities both of the Museum and of the country's standing monuments came to be more fully exploited.

In the newly created state of Iraq, as in fact throughout the Arab world, these were the days of restless nationalism and the attention of the young was rightly being directed to the nation's peculiar historical heritage, partly as a corrective to indiscriminate westernization. It was not therefore surprising that in the Antiquities Department some emphasis should now be placed on Islamic relics, and in particular on such scanty remains as were still to be found testifying to the greatness of the 'Abbasid Caliphate. In this way much-needed care came to be bestowed on the ancient buildings of Baghdad, while precious architectural relics were collected from shrines in the remoter parts of the country, whose ruinous state was beyond repair. Furthermore, in 1936 excavations were undertaken for the first time by the Iraq Government itself, not at first on a pre-Islamic site, but in the ruins of the 'Omayyad capital of Wâsit. Later this work was extended to the vast 'Abbasid city of Sâmarra, to Tekrît and various other Moslem sites. At first these excavations were hampered by lack of technically skilled personnel to conduct them. But by 1939 two Iraqi students returned from America, where they had graduated in archaeology at the University of Chicago. Other young men in the Department had by now obtained valuable practical experience while serving as government inspectors with various foreign expeditions, and the material thus existed for the formation and training of a competent excavating team. Nothing could have more adequately fulfilled the hopes and aspirations of Gertrude Bell and those others who laboured to set the Department on its feet than the development which now took place. It was as though the mantle of Western scientists had temporarily fallen upon the youth of the country itself, and its challenge been soberly accepted.

Early in 1940 the first full-scale government excavation was undertaken on a pre-historic site called Tell 'Uqair, fifty miles south of Baghdad. A sensational discovery was made. This mound represented the well-preserved remains of a temple dating from the proto-Sumerian period and its walls were covered with painted

## FOUNDATIONS IN THE DUST

frescoes. Its publication two years later in Chicago<sup>1</sup> was the first intimation to archaeologists in their wartime *diaspora* that in Iraq at least excavations were still in progress. In the years which followed, other sites were selected for excavation in such a way that the periods which they represented should fall into sequence and eventually cover the whole panorama of Mesopotamian history. The training of staff was thus greatly facilitated, and by 1943 their standard of competence could be considered equal to that of most Western expeditions. It was under these circumstances that the site called Hassunah was discovered.

As early as 1928 Professor Garrod had found in the Kurdish mountains traces of palaeolithic man. But a prodigious gap existed between these cave-dwellers of the Mousterian and Aurignacian periods and the settled agricultural communities of Tell Halaf and Sâmarra, with their evidence of copper-smelting and other advanced processes. Working at Nineveh in 1931, Mallowan, as has already been mentioned, found indications of a culture preceding Sâmarra, but at such a depth beneath the surface that little evidence of its character could be recovered. Twenty miles south of Nineveh, at Hassunah, the Department now discovered a little mound whose surface, amidst the grass and flowers, was littered with broken fragments of this pre-Sâmarra pottery. Its seven metres of superimposed settlements in fact ended on the surface at almost the exact point beyond which the great pit at Nineveh had been unable to penetrate.

During the months that the mound was under excavation the horizon of pre-history once more receded several centuries. Revealed in the simplest terms of archaeological evidence was a new and earliest chapter in the history of what may reasonably be called civilized man. As a nomad he had first ventured out from the mountains on to these grassy uplands above the Tigris. Here at the junction of two streams he had first camped and remained long enough to reap a store of wild barley. In the lowest stratum at Hassunah were the ashes of his camp-fires, and grouped around them the simple paraphernalia of his household—flint-weapons, bone implements, and the first crude pottery vessels. At the next stage he had learnt to sow as well as reap, and his nomadic habits were

<sup>1</sup> *Journal of Near Eastern Studies*, Vol. II, No. 2.

## EPILOGUE

forgotten. Primitive adobe houses began to appear, and the improved pottery was ornamented with painted designs. Near the surface was a well-built village with the practical economy of an agricultural community almost completely developed. Seventy centuries later the modern village of Hassunah is run on much the same lines.

The discovery of Hassunah makes a fitting end to this story of Mesopotamian exploration. For in archaeology the elucidation of the country's history has in some sense been reversed. The writings of the Assyrians and Babylonians led to the discovery of the Sumerians and Akkadians. But the search for the remoter origins of the Sumerians themselves and their predecessors has now reached a point beyond which it seems impossible to pass with any certainty.

Meanwhile the world is once more at peace, and the way is open for a new generation of diggers to enrich and amplify the results of previous research. They will no longer have the role of explorers in a neglected and half-savage country, but will find working conditions little different from those at home. They will also for the first time be able to benefit from the collaboration of their locally-born colleagues.

The British Residency in Baghdad changed its quarters more than once during the early years of the present century. In the modern Embassy building, which stands on the west bank of the Tigris, there is a vestibule which serves as a miniature portrait gallery. Here at a glance one may see the whole saga of British representation, first in Turkish Arabia and later in the kingdom of Iraq. Here is Rich, the first great orientalist, with his look of sober responsibility; Taylor, the recluse, in his library of Arabic books and manuscripts; Rawlinson, the soldier-scholar, absorbed in the enigma of cuneiform writing; Tweedie, whose interest was divided between the men and the horses of Arabia; and others whose names have been omitted from these pages. Their faces are summoned from the past—a company of witnesses to Great Britain's century-long association with Iraq in the realm of culture. Facing them in striking counterpoint are the High Commissioners and Ambassadors of more recent years; men whose concern was for the welfare of the modern state, and whose preoccupation with its future transcended their interest in its

## FOUNDATIONS IN THE DUST

past. And always between the two groups stands, in one's imagination, the figure of Gertrude Bell, who alone watched the transition from bondage and retrospection to this new freedom, and to whose clear vision the tradition of Mesopotamian research owes its perpetuation in a new form.

## BIBLIOGRAPHY

(Books and authors as referred to in the text)

- ELDRED, J., *The voyage of M. John Eldred to Trypolis in Syria by Sea, and from thence by Land and River to Babylon and Balsara.* 1583. (Hakluyt, Vol. VI, Glasgow, 1904, pp. 1-9.)
- BEAUCHAMP, L'ABBÉ DE, *Journal des Sçavarr.* Paris, 1791.
- TUDELA, BENJAMIN OF, *The Itinerary of Benjamin of Tudela* (translated by M. N. Adler, London 1907).
- PETHAHIAH OF RATISBON, *Travels* (translated by Benisch, London 1861).
- RAUWOLFF, LEONHART, in *A Collection of Curious Voyages and Travels*, 12 vols., by John Ray, London 1693.
- TAVERNIER, *The Six Voyages of Tavernier through Turkey into Asia.* London 1678.
- OTTER, JEAN, *Voyage en Turquie et en Perse.* Paris 1748.
- D'ANVILLE, *L'Euphrate et le Tigre.* Paris 1779.
- VINCENZO MARIA DI S. CATERINA DI SIENNA, *Il Viaggi all' Indie Orientali.* Venice 1683.
- IBN HAUKAL, *Tiber Imaginis Terrae.* (Arabic text, edited by J. H. Kramers. 2 vols. Leiden, 1938-9.)
- PIETRO DELLA VALLE, *Suite des Fameux Voyages de Pietro della Valle.* 4 vols. Paris 1663.
- NIEBUHR, KARSTEN, *Voyage en Arabie.* 2 vols. Amsterdam 1776.
- ALEXANDER, CONSTANCE, *Baghdad in Bygone Days.* London 1928.
- HARRIS, WILSON, *Caroline Fox.* London 1944.
- RAWLINSON, GEORGE, *A Memoir of Major-General Sir Henry Creswicke Rawlinson.* London 1898.
- LAYARD, A. H., *Early Adventures in Persia, Susiana and Babylonia.* London 1887.
- MITFORD, E. L., *A Land-March from England to Ceylon.* London 1884.
- RICH, C. J., *Narrative of a Residence in Koordistan by the late Claudius. James Rich Esquire.* Edited by His Widow. 2 vols. London 1836.

## FOUNDATIONS IN THE DUST

- BUCKINGHAM, J. S., *Travels in Mesopotamia*. 2 vols. London 1827.
- SOANE, E. B., *To Mesopotamia and Kurdistan in Disguise*. London 1912.
- BELL, G. L., *Amurath to Amurath*. London 1924.
- LONGRIGG, S. H., *Four Centuries of Modern Iraq*. Oxford 1925.
- RICH, C. J., *Narrative of a Journey to the Site of Babylon*. 2 vols. London 1839.
- HASLIP, J., *Lady Hester Stanhope*. London 1934.
- HILPRECHT, H. V., *The Excavations in Assyria and Babylonia*. Philadelphia 1904.
- PORTER, SIR R. K., *Travels in Georgia, Persia, Armenia, Ancient Babylonia, etc.* 2 vols. London 1821-2.
- GADD, C. J., *Stones of Assyria*. London 1936.
- BUDGE, E. A. W., *Rise and Progress of Assyriology*. London 1925.
- FILMER, H., *Pageant of Persia*. London 1937.
- BAILLIE-FRASER, J., *Travels in Koordistan, Mesopotamia, etc.* 2 vols. London 1840.
- GROVES, A. N., *Journal of Mr. Anthony N. Groves, Missionary*. London 1831.
- COKE, R., *Baghdad City of Peace*. London 1927.
- BUDGE, E. A. W., *By Nile and Tigris*. 2 vols. London 1920.
- AINSWORTH, W. F., *A Personal Narrative of the Euphrates Expedition*. 2 vols. London 1888.
- CHESNEY, COL. L. (afterwards MAJOR-GENERAL), *Expedition for the Survey of the Rivers Euphrates and Tigris*. 2 vols. London 1890.
- "      "      *Narrative of the Euphrates Expedition*. London 1868.
- AINSWORTH, W. F., *Researches in Assyria, Babylonia and Chaldaea*. London 1838.
- LAYARD, A. H., *Nineveh and its Remains*. 2 vols. London 1849.
- ROSS, H. J., *Letters from the East 1837-57*. London 1902.
- LAYARD, A. H., *Autobiography and Letters*. 2 vols. London 1903.
- WIGRAM, REV. W. A., *Cradle of Mankind*. London 1914.
- SYKES, SIR MARK, *The Caliph's Last Heritage*. London 1915.
- BADGER, A. P., *Nestorians and their Rituals*. 2 vols. London 1852.

## BIBLIOGRAPHY

- PLACE, V., *Ninive et l'Assyrie*. 3 vols. Paris 1867.
- LAYARD, A. H., *Nineveh and Babylon*. 2 vols. London 1853.
- ✓ THOMPSON, R. CAMPBELL, *A Century of Exploration at Nineveh*. London 1929.
- LAYARD, A. H., *Discoveries in the Ruins of Nineveh and Babylon*. 2 vols. London 1853.
- „ „ *The Monuments of Nineveh*. London 1853.
- HILPRECHT, H. V., *Explorations in Bible Lands*. Edinburgh 1903.
- LOFTUS, W. K., *Travels and Researches in Chaldæa and Susiana*. London 1857.
- RASSAM, H., *Asshur and the Land of Nimrod*. New York 1897.
- PLACE, VICTOR, *Ninive et l'Assyrie, avec des essais de restauration par F. Thomas*. 3 vols. Paris 1869.
- JONES, CAPT. FELIX, *Memoirs by Commander James Felix Jones, I.N.* Selections from the Records of the Bombay Government. No. XLIII, New Series, Bombay 1857.
- ✓ WOOLLEY, C. L., *The Development of Sumerian Art*. London 1935.
- ✓ WELLS, H. G., *Phoenix*. London 1942.
- KRAMER, S. N., *Sumerian Mythology*. Philadelphia 1944.
- ✓ KOLDEWEY, R., *The Excavations at Babylon*. London 1914.
- ✓ BANKS, E. J., *Bismaya, or the Lost City of Adab*. New York and London 1912.
- DE GENOUILLAC, H., *Premières Recherches Archéologiques à Kich*.
- ✓ MASSIGNON, L., *Mission en Mésopotamie*. 2 vols. Cairo 1910-12.
- ✓ PREUSSER, C., *Nordmesopotamische Baudenkmäler Altchristlicher und Islamischer Zeit*. Leipzig 1911.
- ✓ SARRE, F., & HERZFELD, E., *Archäologische Reise im Euphrat-und Tigris-Gebiet*. 4 vols. Berlin 1911-20.
- MUSIL, ALOIS, *The Middle Euphrates*. New York 1927.
- WOOLLEY, C. L., *Ur of the Chaldees*. London 1929.
- LLOYD, SETON, *Mesopotamia. Excavations on Sumerian Sites*. London 1936.
- ✓ WOOLLEY, C. L., *Ur Excavations*. 3 vols. London 1934-9.
- ✓ DELOUGAZ, P., *The Temple Oval at Khafâjah*. Chicago 1940.



# INDEX

- Abargi, 210  
 Abarta, 159  
 'Abbasid Caliphate, 19, 103, 158, 221  
 Abdullah Pasha, 28, 40  
 Abraham, the Patriarch, 46, 164  
 Abu Habbah (see Sippar)  
 Abu Salman, 116, 117  
 Abu Shahrain (see Eridu)  
 Académie des Inscriptions, 135  
 Acre, Fall of, 10  
 Adab (see Bismayah)  
 Adapa, 141  
 Aden, 156, 166  
 Aegean, 11, 60  
 Afaq, 184, 185  
 Afghanistan, Political Agency in, 82  
 Afghan War, 82  
 Aghas, Kurdish, 70  
*aghous*, 92  
 Ahuramazda, the God, 80  
 Ainsworth, W. F., vii, 88 ff., 96  
 Ajil Yawar, Sheikh, 122  
 Akkad, 18  
 Akhenaton, 188  
 Albanian renegade, 42  
 Aleppo, 2, 13, 22, 24, 26, 42, 44, 45, 83, 95,  
     96, 166, 168, 194  
 Alexander, Constance, xii  
 Alexander-the-Great, 2  
 Alexandretta, 23, 194  
 Al Gharraf, 20  
 Ali Ridha, 83, 86  
 Al Jazîrah, 22, 26, 120, 203  
 Al Qasr, 39  
 Al Rashîd Street, 30  
 Al Safînah, 18  
 Al 'Ubaid, 205, 213, 214, 219  
 Amadiyah, 89  
 'American aid to Russia', 159  
 American excavators, 119, 162, 169, 184,  
     202, 212, 214, 215, 217  
 Amida (see Diarbekir)  
 Ammân, 95  
 'Amrân 'Ali, 39  
*Amurath to Amurath*, 26, 204  
 Anah, 26, 87, 89, 91  
 Anatolia, 168  
 Anders, General, 122  
 Andrae, Dr. Walter, 202  
 Ankara, 53  
 Antioch, 88, 104  
 Antiquities Law, 193, 201, 205, 206  
 Anu, 141  
 'Aqar Qûf, 2, 65, 68, 134, 192  
*arabâna*, 83
- Arab awakening, 204  
     Bureau, 205  
     costume, 44  
     geographers, 1, 106, 159  
 Arabic, Baghdad dialect of, 66  
     manuscripts, 194  
     Rich's mastery of, 12  
     spelling of, xi  
 Arab wars of conquest, 197  
 arak, 53  
 Ararat, Mount, 18  
 Arban, 142  
 Ark, the, 18, 155, 165  
 Armenians, 84, 95, 99  
 Arpachiyah, 214, 220  
 artist-engravers, vii  
 artists sent to Layard, 138  
 Asfar, J., 178  
 Ashur, 96, 112, 134, 201, 202  
 Ashur-bani-pal, 142, 156  
     Palace of, 127, 140, 151, 154, 156, 157  
 Ashur-nasir-pal, 128, 135, 153  
 Ashur-resh-ishi, 142  
 asses, wild, 127  
*Asshur and the Land of Nimrod*, 177  
 Assyria, 4, 18, 22, 97, 103, 159  
     capital of, 106, 112  
*Assyria*, S.S., 102  
 Assyrian character, 137  
     Christians, 116, 124  
     Excavation Fund, 147, 156  
     Gate, Baghdad, 131  
 Assyriology, 5, 82, 138, 199  
 Aurignacian remains, 222  
 Aylesbury, 167
- Baalbek, 42, 96, 97  
*Bab al Wastâni*, 63  
 Babel, the Tower of, 2, 164, 200  
 Babil, 39  
 Babylon, 2, 3, 38 ff., 65, 68, 143, 149, 174,  
     191, 199 ff.  
     Museum, 201  
 Babylonia, 18, 89, 146, 149, 162  
     Layard in, 142, 143  
 Babylonian Gates, 1  
 Badger, A. P., Missionary, 110, 124  
 Bâdiah, 18  
 Badri Beg, 190, 191  
 Baghdad, vii, 63, 82 ff., 98, 115, 145, 160, 194  
     heat of, 31, 65, 92, 123  
     Museum (see Iraq Museum)  
     Residency, 5, 28 ff., 64, 82, 85, 92, 102  
     115, 145, 150, 160, 188, 189, 223  
     Round City of Mansur, 30  
 Baillie-Fraser, vii, 5, 75, 83, 87, 99

# INDEX

- Bakhtiyari tribes, 9, 100, 101  
 Baladai, 139  
 Balawât, 151, 169 ff., 177, 194  
 Balfour, 197  
 Balios, the, 145, 173  
 Balkans, 58  
 Bankes, William, 42  
 Banks, E. J., 202  
 Baqubah, 158  
 Barker, Mr., 45, 53  
 Bâshiqah, 142  
 Basrah, 3, 37, 85, 87, 102  
     heat of, 13, 15, 22, 75, 123, 178  
 Basrâwi pigeons, 24  
 Bath, ix  
 Beauchamp, l'abbé de, 1, 3, 77  
 Baviân, 138  
*Bec de Canard*, 54  
 Bedouins, 21, 84, 95, 111  
 Beehive villages, 45  
 Behistun, 78, 79, 80, 99, 145  
 Bell (artist), 138  
 Bell, Gertrude L., x, 24, 26, 27, 34, 73, 201,  
     203, 204, 206, 221, 224  
 Bell, Mr., 73  
 Bellino, 60, 64, 65, 67, 68, 73, 78  
 Belshazzar, 176  
 Belus, 69  
 Bent, J. T., 193  
 Berlin Museum, 191, 201  
 Beyrout, 96  
 Bint-al-Amir, 184  
 Bîr, 47  
 Birejik, 88, 89  
 Bîr Melossa, 23  
 Birs Nimrod (Borsippa), 2, 65, 68, 164, 174,  
     191, 200  
 Bismayah, 202  
 Black-headed People, 163  
 Black Obelisk, 129, 130, 137  
 Bombay, 42, 43, 130, 136, 137  
     Govt. Records, 158  
 Boré, M., 100  
 Borsippa (see Birs Nimrod)  
 Bosphorus, 58  
 Botta, P. E., viii, 99, 102 ff., 113, 119, 124,  
     131, 135, 136, 198  
 Boucher, 147, 155, 156, 157  
 Bouvet, M., 161  
 Breasted, J. H., 169, 212, 217  
 Bristol, 5, 7  
 British Museum, viii, 66, 77, 81, 118, 130,  
     136, 140, 152, 154, 156, 159, 160, 164,  
     165, 170, 173, 174, 183, 187, 190, 202,  
     205, 206, 214, 220  
 Bronze Gates of Balawât, 170, 173  
 Bruce, Mrs., 37  
 Buckingham, J. S., vii, 5, 31, 32, 41 ff., 61 ff.,  
     83, 121  
 Budge, Wallis, viii, 77, 145, 157, 166, 173,  
     180, 182, 186, 187 ff., 199  
 Bulgaria, 95  
*bunds*, 19  
 Burar, 159  
 Bushire, 74, 75, 79, 136, 160  
 bustards, 178  
 Butterworth, 188  
*By Nile and Tigris*, 173  
 Byron, Lord, 40, 73, 137  
  
 Cadetship, military in H.E.I.C., 6  
 Cairo, 7  
     Rich's sojourn in, 12  
 Calah (Nimrûd), 112, 135  
 Callirrhoe, 48  
 Campbell, Lieutenant, 99  
 Campbell Thompson, R., 137, 205, 214  
 Canning, Sir Stratford, 102, 108 ff., 114, 118  
     119  
 Cannon Gate at Mosul, 120  
 Caravans, 23, 45, 53, 54  
 carp, sacred, 50  
 carpeted divans, 49  
*castellum*, 26  
 Catani family, 194  
 cave paintings, 181  
*cawass*, Rich's, 68  
 Central building at Nimrûd, 128  
 Ceylon, 136  
     overland journey to, 10  
 Chaldea, 146  
 Chaldean Christians, 119, 124  
*charchaf*, 32  
*chardag*, 92, 116, 123  
 Chatham, 136  
 Chesney Expedition (see Euphrates  
     Expedition)  
     Major-General, 88 ff.  
 Chicago, 217, 218, 221, 222  
     House, Luxor, 217  
*chikor*, 22  
*chôl*, the, 20, 21, 184  
 Chozroes, 158  
 Christian Churches, 203  
 Churchill, H. A., 146  
 Cilicia, 89  
 city-states, 163  
 Clare, Lord, 8  
 Cleveland, Commander, 90  
 coal, 89  
 Cockburn, Col. James, 5  
 coins, ancient, 77  
 Coke, R., 85  
 Comagene, 89  
*Comet*, S.S., 188, 190  
 Congo scandals, 197  
 Constantinople, 10, 135  
*Contemporary Review*, 193  
 Cool Fountain, 193  
 Cooper (artist), 138  
*Cormoran*, S.S., 123  
 Coste, M., 99, 100  
 Cox, Sir Percy, 201

# INDEX

- Creation, Legend of, viii, 141, 167  
 Crimean War, 160  
 Cromer, Lord, 204  
 Crystal Palace, 161  
 Ctesiphon, 65  
 cuneiform, 4, 77 ff., 92, 98, 138, 145  
 curry, 189  
 Cyrus, the Tomb of, 75, 77  
  
*Daily News*, 192  
*Daily Telegraph*, viii, 165  
 Damascus, 22, 95, 96  
     British Consul at, 96  
 dances, curious, 50  
 d'Anville, 1  
 Darius, son of Hystaspes, 78, 80, 81  
 date palms, 22  
 Da'ūd Agha, 114  
 Da'ūd Pasha, 28, 73, 74, 82, 86  
 Daur, 158  
 dealers in antiquities, 161, 182, 187, 190, 195  
 'Death-pits', 210  
 de Genouillac, 202  
 Delhi 'Abbas, 61  
 della, Valle, Pietro, 2, 3, 77  
 Delougaz, P., 218, 219  
 Deluge, the, 18, 155, 162, 165, 166  
 Department of Antiquities, x, 205, 207, 220, 221  
 Der, 191, 194 ff.  
 Derby Winner, 8  
 Derezor, 26  
 Der Za'ferān, 38, 52  
 de Sarzec, 162, 164, 178 ff., 186  
 de Staël, Madame, 59  
 de St. Albert, Emmanuel, 1  
 Deutsch-Orient Gesellschaft, 202, 212  
 'Devonshire', 34  
 Devonshire, Duchess of, 60  
 Diarbekir, 13, 24, 53, 54  
*dish parasi*, 105  
 di Sienna, V. M. di S., 1  
 diorite statues, 179, 183  
 division of finds, 168, 193, 201, 206  
 Diwāniyah, 185  
 Diyālah, 71, 158, 159, 212  
*Don Juan*, 40  
 Dromedary mail, 23  
 Dujail, or Little Tigris, 19  
 Dukes, Dr., 75  
 Dūr Kurigalzu, 65  
 Dūr Sharrukin (Khorsabad), 106  
  
 Ealing, 7  
 Eannatum, 182  
 Eastern Palace Hotel, 189  
 East India Company, 3, 4, 7, 36, 77, 137, 160  
 Ehabarra, 175  
 Edessa (see Urfah)  
 Egypt, 18, 187, 188, 191  
 Egyptian hieroglyphs, 78  
 E-harsag-kurkurra, 202  
 Elamite language, 78, 82  
 Eldred, John, 1, 23  
 Ellasar (see Larsa)  
 Ellenborough, Lord, 82  
 Elphinstone, Mountstuart, 75  
 Emperor of Austria, 58  
 Entemena, 182  
 Erbil, 61  
 Erech (see Warka)  
 Eridu, 164, 205  
 Erskine, Mackintosh's secretary, 14  
 Esarhaddon, 128, 142  
 Etana, 141  
 E-temen-anki, 200  
 Euphrates, 18 ff., 26, 87 ff.  
*Euphrates*, S.S., 87 ff.  
 Euphrates Expedition, vii, 5, 87 ff., 99, 160  
  
 Farah (Shuruppak), 212  
 Feisal II, King, 176  
 Filmer, Mr., 79  
 Finati, Giovanni, 42  
*firmāns*, 99, 100, 107, 110, 114, 118, 152, 165, 167, 169, 179, 180, 187, 193, 194, 195  
 Flamingoes, 21  
 Flandin, M., 99, 100, 107, 135  
 Flood, the Biblical, viii  
 Fortified Province, the, ix, 2  
 Fort William, 89  
 Fox, Caroline, 6  
     Charles, 6  
 francolins, 178  
 Frankfurt, H., 212  
 French Asiatic Society, viii, 103  
     Babylonian Expedition, 157  
     Government, 99, 100, 107  
     painters, 181  
     in Baghdad, 34  
 frescoes, 134  
 Fresnel, 143, 149  
  
 Gadd, C. J., 77, 96, 119, 136, 155  
 Garrod, Prof. D., 222  
 Gates, the, 26  
 gazelles, 21  
 Genesis, 46  
 German excavators, 39, 96, 134, 147, 198 ff., 218, 220  
 Ghararah, 34, 35  
 Gharraf, al, 20  
 Gibbon, 1, 10  
 Gilgamesh, 141, 147  
 Gomel River, 138  
 Gordon, General, 138  
 Göttingen Academy, 79  
 Grant, Sir Robert, 87  
 Granville, Earl, 167  
 graves at Nimrūd, 114  
 Great George Street, 59  
 Greek Communion, 53  
     manuscripts, 194

# INDEX

- Greyhounds, xi, 111, 116, 117, 121  
 Grotefend, viii, 78, 81, 199  
 Groves, A. N., missionary, 84 ff.  
 Gudea statues, 180, 183  
*gufas*, 188, 190  
  
 Hadîthah, 23  
 Haifa, 22  
 Hajee Abdullah Beg, 70  
 Haji Naji, 34  
 Halicarnassus marbles, 110  
 Hall, H. R., 205, 213, 220  
 Hamadân, 73, 99  
 Hamdi Bey, 190, 193, 198, 206  
 Hammâm, 146  
     Alil, 96  
 Harford-Jones, 34  
 Haroun al Rashid, 98  
 Hassan Kaif, 25  
 Hassunah, 96, 222  
 Hatrah, 120, 122  
 Hauran, 95  
 hautboy, 39  
 Hebdan, the, 120  
 Hebrew women, 46  
*Helen's Babies*, 137  
 Herat, 79  
 Herodotus, 73  
 herons, 21  
 Herzfeld, E., 203  
*hieros gamos*, 209  
 Hillah, 2, 67, 101, 184, 201  
 Hilprecht, H. V., 67, 119, 147, 168, 176, 184  
 Hindiyah Barrage, 19  
 Hindustan, the, 11  
 Hine, Mr., 27, 40, 60, 64, 65, 73  
 Hit, 18, 26  
 Hodder (artist), 138, 156  
 Hollow Syria, 89  
 horse-dealer, 54  
 horses, Arab, 121, 189  
 houses in Baghdad, 31  
 Husaibah, 26  
 hussars, Rich's, 36, 38  
 Hyslop, Dr., 160  
  
 ibex, 22  
 ibises, 21  
 Ibn Hauqal, 2  
 Ibn Serapion, 159  
 India, 7, 82, 85, 88, 97, 100  
     Turks' first contact with, 29, 42  
 Indian Navy, 102, 158  
 Ionia, 97  
 Iraq, vii, 17 ff., 220, 221, 223  
     Government Excavations, 134, 143, 195,  
         221 ff.  
     Museum, ix, x, 183, 201, 205  
     State of in Rich's time, 28  
*Iraq*, journal, 68, 219  
 Isfahan, 100  
     Armenian Cathedral at, 75  
  
*Ishakkus*, 163, 180  
 Ishtar Gate, 201  
     Temple at Ashur, 202, 205  
 Is Jarfa, 87  
 Iskanderun pigeons, 24  
 Isma'il Pasha, 115, 118, 120  
 Ismid, 58  
 Issus, Gulf of, 89  
 Istanbul, 28, 58, 60, 108, 152, 166, 167  
     British Ambassador at, 35, 58, 102, 108,  
         167, 193  
 Italy, 60, 135  
 ivories, 113, 129, 130  
  
 Jaghjagh, 55, 174  
 Janidar, Nasr, 213  
 Jazîrat ibn 'Omar, 25  
 Jebel Hamrin, 61  
 Jehan Numa, 75  
 Jehesh tribe, 111  
 Jehu, son of Omri, 129  
 Jerablus, 24  
 Jerash, 95  
 Jerusalem, British Consul in, 95  
 Jirbah Tribe, 38  
 Jonah, the Prophet, 3  
 Jones, Captain Felix, 123, 146, 157 ff., 189  
 Jordan, Julius, 220  
 Judah, 46  
  
 Kadhimain, 61, 145  
 Kamechlie, 54  
 Kandahar, Battle of, 82, 100  
 Kara Tepe, 61  
 Karûn, 89, 102  
 Kassites, 149  
*kelek* rafts, 13, 24, 25, 60, 73, 97, 111, 123,  
     130, 133, 157  
 Kerak, 95  
 Keramles, 142  
 Keritli Oglu, Mohammed, 105, 107, 111,  
     114, 121  
 Kermanshah, 68, 73, 78, 79, 99  
 Ker Porter, Sir Robert, vii, 5, 67, 68, 69, 80,  
     99  
 Khabûr, 26, 89, 142, 174, 214, 220  
 Khafâjah, 212, 218, 219, 220  
 Khorasân, 159  
 Khorsabad, viii, ix, 99, 106 ff., 112, 119, 124,  
     131, 132, 146, 149, 157, 212, 215  
 Khosr river, 139  
 Khuzistan, 101, 102  
 Kifri, 61  
 King, L. W., 202  
 King's Bench, Court of, 44  
 Kinneir, Macdonald, 75  
 Kirkuk, 61, 71, 83  
 Kish (al 'Oheimir), 68, 149, 163, 202, 212  
 Kizil Robat, 68  
 Koldewey, Dr. R., 199, 201, 203  
 Kramer, S. N., 186  
 Kufah, 18

# INDEX

- Kurdish mountains, 117, 139  
 Kurdish provinces of Irân, 73  
 Kurdistan, 69, 70, 89, 160  
 Kurds, 69  
 Kurnah, 108, 157  
 Kût, 20, 158  
 Kuthah, 175  
 Kuyunjik, Ninevite mound, viii, ix, 105, 108,  
     122, 134, 139, 151 ff., 156, 165, 170, 174,  
     187, 193, 194, 202, 214  
  
 Lachish, viii, 140  
 Lagash, 20, 163, 164, 178 ff., 220  
 Lak, 142  
 Langdon, S., 213  
 Larsa (Senkara), 87, 148, 220  
 Lawrence, T. E., 12, 13  
 Layard, H. A., vii, viii, ix, xi, 5, 8-10, 94,  
     108, 128 ff., 146, 152, 167, 179, 192  
 League of Nations, 220  
 Lebanon, 96  
 leeches, 95  
 leopards, 93, 101  
 Libraries, Royal, 140, 151, 163, 165, 168, 176  
 Limes of Rome, 26  
 Lincoln, Abraham, 5  
 Lion Hunt, 151, 155, 167  
 lions, 68, 93, 104, 148  
 Lister, Sir Robert, 58  
 Lloyd, Seton, vii, ix, x, 131, 207  
 Lock, Consul at Alexandria, 11, 14  
 Loftus, W. K., viii, 5, 119, 146, 150, 156, 164  
 Longman & Co., 43  
 Longrigg, S. H., 28  
 Longworth, Mr., 130  
 Loud, Gordon, 108  
 Louvre, 157, 162, 179, 181, 183, 220  
 Lucerne, 59  
*lugal*, 209  
 Lynch brothers, 92, 99  
 Lynch, Kerr, 147  
  
*Macbeth*, 2  
 Mackintosh, Kitty, 14, 37 ff.  
 Mackintosh, Sir James, 13, 14, 35, 40, 59  
 MacNeill, Sir John, 10  
 Madharayah, 159  
 Madrid, Layard at, 168  
 Mahdi, the Caliph, 23  
 Mahrattas, 8  
 Majlis, the, 145  
 Malcolm, Sir John, 7, 9, 37  
 Mallowan, M. E. L., 220, 222  
 Malta, 11  
 Mamluks, Georgian, 28, 82  
 Mamluk, Rich disguised as, 13  
 Ma'mûn, Caliph, 159  
 Mandate, the, 220  
 Manesty, Basrah Agent, 13, 16, 34  
 Manhattan, 197  
 Marcellinus, 127  
 Marco Polo, 2  
  
 Mardin, 13, 24, 38, 51, 52 ff., 57, 194  
 Mari, 220  
 Marsh-Arabs, 20  
 Mary Rich's Journal, 70  
 Maude, General, 205  
 Medina, 148, 149  
 Median Wall, 160  
 Megiddo, 217  
 Mehdi, the, 138  
 Memoirs, Rich's, 39, 67  
 Mes-kalam-dug, 209  
 Mespila, 103  
 method, archaeological, 119, 129, 134, 140,  
     147, 150, 151, 162, 168, 186, 187, 197 ff.  
 Midhat Pasha, 96  
 Middle East, 94  
 Mignan, Captain, vii, 5, 86  
 Milan, 59  
 Minas's Mother, 70, 71  
 Mines de l'Orient, 39  
 Mirkhân, 126  
 Missett, Col., 12  
 Mitford, 10, 95, 96, 97, 99, 100, 111  
 'Mohaffas, 71  
 Mohammedrah, 102, 109, 146  
 Mohl, Julius, 103, 106  
 Monasteries, 73, 116  
 Mongols, 19  
 mongoose, 93  
*Monument de Ninive*, 135  
 More, Hannah, 7  
*Morning Post*, 34, 130  
 mosaics, prehistoric, 147  
 Moslem antiquities, 203, 221  
 Mosul, viii, 3, 56, 60, 73, 96, 102, 103 ff., 111,  
     120, 131, 150, 151, 168  
 mounds, 97, 98, 99, 125, 151  
 Mousterian remains, 222  
 mulberries, 49  
 mule, Buckingham's, 62  
 Muntafiq tribe, 27, 40, 178  
 muqayyar (see Ur)  
 Murghab, 77  
 Murray, publishers, 43, 136  
 Musil, Alois, 203  
 Mussolini, 197  
 Mutawakkil, Caliph, 158  
  
 Nabi Yunus, Ninevite mound, viii, 3, 105,  
     151, 152, 174  
 Nabonidus, 176  
 Nabu-apal-idinna, 175  
 Nahr al Malak, 19  
 Nahr Awân, 20, 158 ff.  
 Nahr 'Issa, 19  
 Naifah, 111  
 Najaf, 208  
 Naples, 11  
 Napoleon, 59, 60, 78  
 Napoleonic war, 4  
 Naqsh-i-Rajah, 77  
*Narrative*, Rich's, 69

# INDEX

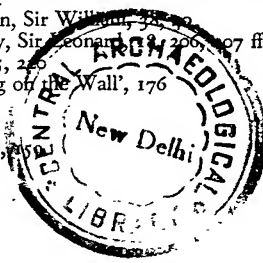
- Naram-Sin, 176  
 Nâsiriyah, 164, 178, 207  
 Nâsir Pasha, 178  
 Nebo, statues of, 153  
 Nebuchadnezzar, 149, 175, 200  
 Negub, 116  
 Nelson's fleet, 11  
 Neo-Babylonian Empire, 200, 215  
 Neolithic times, 18  
 Nepean, Sir Evan, 59  
 Nergal Gate at Nineveh, 122  
 Nestorians, 116, 124, 128  
 New Year's Festival, 208  
 Niebuhr, Karsten, 4, 78  
 Niffar (see Nippur)  
 Nile, 18, 19  
 Nimrod, 1  
 Nimrûd, viii, ix, xi, 96, 97, 110, 111 ff., 128 ff.,  
 142, 152, 153, 161, 170, 174  
 Nineveh, xi, 2, 56, 73, 97, 112, 135, 161, 168,  
 205, 214, 222  
*Nineveh and its Remains*, 137  
*Ninive et l'Assyrie*, 155, 157  
 Nin-Harsag Temple, 219  
 Nippur, 143, 146, 162, 184 ff.  
 Nisibin, 24, 54, 55, 57, 96  
*Nitocris*, S.S., 123, 146, 157  
 Nizir, Mountains of, 165  
 North-west Palace at Nimrûd, 112, 128, 130  
  
 Obelisk, White, 153  
 observatory, 112  
 'Oheimir, Al (Kish), 68  
 Oil Company, 133  
 Old Testament, 46, 117, 137  
 Opis, 160  
 opium, 108  
 Oppert, 149, 163  
 Oriental Institute, 131, 132, 150, 212, 217  
 220  
 Orontes, 88, 89  
 Otter, Jean, 1  
 Ottoman Empire, ix  
 Museum, 188, 191, 193  
 Ouseley, Sir Gore, 37  
 Oval Temple, Khafajah, 219  
 Oxford, 213  
  
 Paganini, 59  
 Palaces, Assyrian, 112  
 palankeen, 27, 38, 70  
 Palmerston, Lord, 138  
 Palmyra, 23, 42  
 Panwell, 8  
 Paris, 59, 135, 136, 149  
 Parrot, Dr., 220  
 Parthians, 147  
 Pashalik of Baghdad, 28, 82, 83, 86, 168, 179  
 of Mosul, 105  
 Pashas of Baghdad, 28  
 Pasha of Mosul, 105  
 Pehlevi inscriptions, 78  
  
 Pennsylvania, University Museum of, 183,  
 184, 206, 220  
 Persepolis, 2, 4, 75, 77, 79, 89  
 Persia, 4, 68, 77  
 Persian Appenines, 89  
 Gulf, 17, 214  
 Peters, Dr., 184, 185  
 Petra, 95  
 Phillipopolis (Plovdiv), 95  
 pigeon post, 23  
 pig, wild, 22, 104, 178  
 pilgrims from Jerusalem, 52  
 pipe-line, 23  
 pirates in the Gulf, 15  
*Pirates of Penzance*, 137  
 Place, Victor, 146, 149, 150, 152, 154, 161  
 plague, the, 83  
 Polish army, 122  
 Political Agency in Turkish Arabia, 4  
 Poona, 8  
 poplars, 22  
 Porte, the Sublime, 28, 165  
 pottery, painted, 212, 214, 223  
 Preusser, Conrad, 203  
 Procession Street, 200  
 proto-Sumerians, 212  
 Prussian Government, 157  
*Punch*, 168  
  
*Qâdî*, the, 115  
 Qal'at Sharqât, 96, 97, 122, 133, 134, 153  
 Qat al Kisru, 158  
 Quakers, 6  
*Quarterly Review*, 43, 44  
  
 Rabban Hormuzd, 73  
 Rafidian, 17  
*raki*, 48  
 Ramâdi, 26  
 Rassam, Christian, 96, 111, 115, 139  
 Hormuzd, viii, 115, 128, 132, 135, 138,  
 140, 142, 150 ff., 162, 164, 166 ff., 178,  
 179, 182, 187  
 Mrs., 121  
 Nimrûd, 168, 173, 194  
*Rassam v. Budge*, 192  
 Ratisbon, Rabbi Pethahiah of, 1  
 Rauwolf, Leonhart, 1, 3  
 Rawah, 26  
 Rawlinson, Canon George, 7, 115  
 H. C., vii, ix, 4, 7, 79 ff., 92, 115, 118, 123,  
 138, 143, 145, 148, 150, 154, 155, 156,  
 160, 161, 164, 167, 188, 223  
 reed buildings, 20  
 Rennell, Major, 67  
 Renouf, M., 193  
 Resen, 97  
 Residency, British at Baghdad (see Baghdad  
 Residency)  
 Rich, C. J., vii, xii, 4, 5, 6, 27, 28 ff., 57 ff.,  
 64 ff., 69 ff., 159, 160, 223  
 Mary, 14, 27, 30 ff., 57 ff., 69 ff., 75, 77

# INDEX

- Rich's collection of antiquities, 65, 67, 77  
 death, 75  
 Roberts, Lord, 7  
 rock-cut inscriptions, 77 ff.  
 Rockefeller, J. D., Jr., 212  
 Rosetta Stone, 78  
 Ross, Dr., 101, 160  
   H. J., 98, 99, 101, 103, 111, 121  
 Rouet, M., 113, 122  
 Royal Asiatic Society, 81  
 Royal Cemetery, 207 ff., 215  
 Royal Geographic Society, 101  
 Rumeilân, 55  
 Rundell, Mrs., 111  
 Rusafah, 30, 61, 84  
 Russia, 82, 84, 99, 109  
 Russian Agent, 79  
 Rutbah Wells, 23
- Safinah, Al, 18  
 Sa'id Pasha, 28, 40, 73  
 Salamiyah, 113, 114  
 salary, Rich's, 36  
 Salisbury, Lord, 188  
*salûgis*, xi, 116, 117, 121  
 Samarra, 18, 158, 221  
 sandgrouse, 21, 46  
 Sarai, the Baghdad, 29, 86  
 Sardanapallus, 1, 153  
 Sargon II, King, 135, 150  
 Sargon of Akkad, 176, 196  
 Sarre, F., 203  
 Sassanian antiquities, 99, 100  
 Sati Beg al Hasri, 220  
 Schönbrunn, 58  
 scorpions, 71, 123  
 sculpture, Sumerian, 181  
 Scutari, 58  
 Second Republic, 135  
 Selby, Lieutenant, 99, 102  
 Seleucia, 2  
 Seleucid Emperors, 215  
 Seljuk Sultans, 159  
 Semiramis, 1  
 Semitics in Babylonia, 163  
 Senkara (Larsa), 87, 148  
 Sennacherib, viii, 135, 139, 140  
   Palace of, 134, 139  
 Sepharvaim (see Sippar)  
 Sepoy Guard, 27, 74  
 Septimus Severus, 55  
 Shah of Persia, 8, 79, 99  
 Shaikh Âdi, 124  
 Shaikhân, 124  
 Shalmaneser II, 134, 170  
   III, 129, 135  
 Shamash, 148, 175, 176, 177  
 Shamiyah Desert, 18  
 Shammar tribe, 101, 121  
 Shamsi-Adad iv, 153  
 Shatt al'Arab, 20, 101, 102, 156  
 Shatt al Hai, 178, 182
- Shatt al Kar, 148, 149  
 Shatt al Nil, 19  
 Shebek, 106, 131, 169  
 Sherif Khân, 142  
 Shemamyk, 142  
 Shi'ites, 145  
 Shînar, Plain of, 163  
 Shiraz, 75, 77, 82  
 Shirley, Sir Anthony, 3  
 Shubad, 210  
 Shuster, 100, 101, 102  
 Siege of the Residency, 74  
 Sikhs, 189  
 Singara, 127  
 Sinjar, Jebel, 52, 55, 84, 124 ff.  
 Sinna, 73  
 Sippar, 151, 175, 187, 191, 196  
*sirdabs*, 22, 31, 66, 151, 174  
 Skunka, 80  
 Slipper coffins, 147  
 Smerdis, 80  
 Smith, George, viii, 162, 164 ff.  
   Sidney, 207, 220  
 Soane, E. B., 24  
 Sofuk, Shaikh, 102, 121, 122  
 Society of Biblical Archaeology, 165  
 Soor, 52  
 soundings, stratographical, xi, 212, 214  
 South-west Palace at Nimrûd, 112, 113, 117,  
   128  
 Spring in Iraq, 116  
 'squeezes', 81  
 Stanhope, Lady Hester, 41, 42, 46  
 steaks from a live ox, 46  
 Stela of the Vultures, 181, 182  
 stratification, 198, 212  
 Strick-Asfar Co., 178  
 Sublime Porte, 82, 108, 109  
 Sulaimaniyah, 70, 72  
 Sulaiman Pasha, 28, 35, 36, 40  
 Sultan, the, 118, 194  
 Sumer, x, 17, 139, 165 ff., 202  
*Sumer*, Journal, 196  
 Sumerians, 163 ff., 212, 223  
 Sumerian texts, 181, 186  
   religion, 202  
 Summer Palace (Babu), 39  
 Susa, 100  
 Susiana, 9  
 Sykes-Picot Agreement, 103  
 Sykes, Sir Mark, 104  
 Syria, 88, 97  
   Hollow, 89  
 Syriac manuscripts, 53, 77, 194  
 Syrian Desert, 22, 45  
   Patriarch, 52  
 Syro-Hittite antiquities, 174
- Tabernacles, Feast of, 116  
 tablets, 139, 140, 165, 166, 168, 176, 183,  
   186, 187, 190, 191, 193, 194

# INDEX

- Tahya Pasha, 124, 125  
*takht-awân* 38, 70, 72  
 Takht-i-Jamshia, 77  
 Tak-i-Bustân, 68, 99  
 Tamar, 46  
 Tamerlaine, 49  
 Tanner, Miss, ix  
 Taqui, 70, 71  
 Tarbisu, 142  
*tarboosh*, 101  
*tatars*, 40, 53, 54, 56, 61, 64, 72, 84, 102, 108  
 tattooing, 67  
 Tavernier, 1, 23, 53  
 taxation, Ottoman, 28  
 Taylor, Col., viii, 82, 83, 84, 98, 99, 102, 223  
     J. E., 164  
 Teheran, 79, 99  
     British Ambassador at, 79  
 Tekrit, 123, 158, 221  
 Tell Abu Habbah (see Sippar)  
 Tell Abu Harmal, 143, 176  
 Tell Abu Maria, 142  
 Tell 'Afar, 125  
 Tell Ajrab, 212  
 Tell Asmar, 212, 217  
 Tell Billah, 142  
 Tell el Amarnah, 188, 191  
 Tell Halaf, 214  
 Tell Hassuna, 96, 222  
 Tell Hariri, 220  
 Tell Ibrahim (see Kuthah)  
 Tell Jide, 146  
 Tell Jokha (Umma), 87  
 Tell Kaif, 124  
 Tell Kotchek, 55  
 Tell Mohammed, 143  
 Tell Muqayyar (see Ur)  
 Tellloh (see Lagash)  
 Tell 'Omar (Salencia), 215  
 Tell Sifr, 148, 149  
 Tell 'Uqair, 221  
 Tell Usquf, 124  
 Tepe Gawra, 214, 220  
 Theodore, King of Abyssinia, 166, 192  
 'Thisbe's Well', 73  
 Thomas, Felix, 149, 157  
*Tiger, The*, 2  
 Tiglath-Pileser I, 135, 142  
 Tigris, 18 ff., 27, 85, 88, 157  
*Tigris*, S.S., 87 ff.  
 Tiyari Mountains, 124  
 Tilbis, 26  
 Tobacco, 22  
 Tod, Dr., 75  
 Toga, 148  
 Toma Shishman, 134  
 Transport of antiquities, 130, 135, 136, 149,  
     156, 157  
 Trieste, 60  
 Trincomalee, 136  
 Tripoli, 2  
 Troy, Plain of, 11  
 Tudela, Rabbi Benjamin of, 1, 3  
 Turco-Persian frontier, 109, 138, 146  
 Turcomans, 46, 51, 125  
 Turkish Arabia, 4  
     Government excavations, 151, 188, 195  
 Tweedie, Col., 188, 223  
 Twopenny, Mr., 9  
 Tyre, 94  
 'Ukhaidir, 27  
 Ur (of the Chaldees), ix, 18, 87, 146, 149,  
     163, 164, 205, 207 ff., 212, 215, 220  
     Junction, 207  
 Urfah, 24, 47 ff., 96  
 Urmia, 124  
 Uruk (see Warka)  
 Umari, Ali Effendi, 120  
 Umma (Tell Jokha), 20, 87, 181  
 Upton, Hon. G., 8  
 Van, 124, 168, 174  
 Venice, 60  
 Vienna, 58  
 vines, 22  
*Volunteer*, the, 75  
 von Oppenheim, Max, 214  
 Wâdi Jemâf, 122  
 Wâdi Musa, 95  
 Wâdi Qassab, 121  
 Walled cities, 163  
*Waqt al barriyyah*, 116  
 Warka, 146, 147, 148, 163, 164, 212, 213,  
     218, 220  
 Wasit, 221  
 water-buffaloes, 20  
 waterfowl, 21  
 Waterloo, 60  
 water-wheels, 93  
 Wellington, Duke of, 59  
 Wells, H. G., 181  
 Wherry, Mr., 96  
 White trucks, 133  
 White, Sir William, 193, 194  
 Whiteley, William, ix  
 Wigram, Rev. W. A., 103  
 Wilkins, Mr., Company's Librarian, 6, 14  
 William IV, King, 88  
 Williams, Colonel, 146  
 Wilson, Sir Arnold, 24  
 winged bulls, 118, 122, 128, 131, 133, 139,  
     151  
 Wiseman, Sir William, 206, 207 ff., 213,  
     215, 220  
 'Writing off the Wall', 176  
 Ya'qûbi, 159

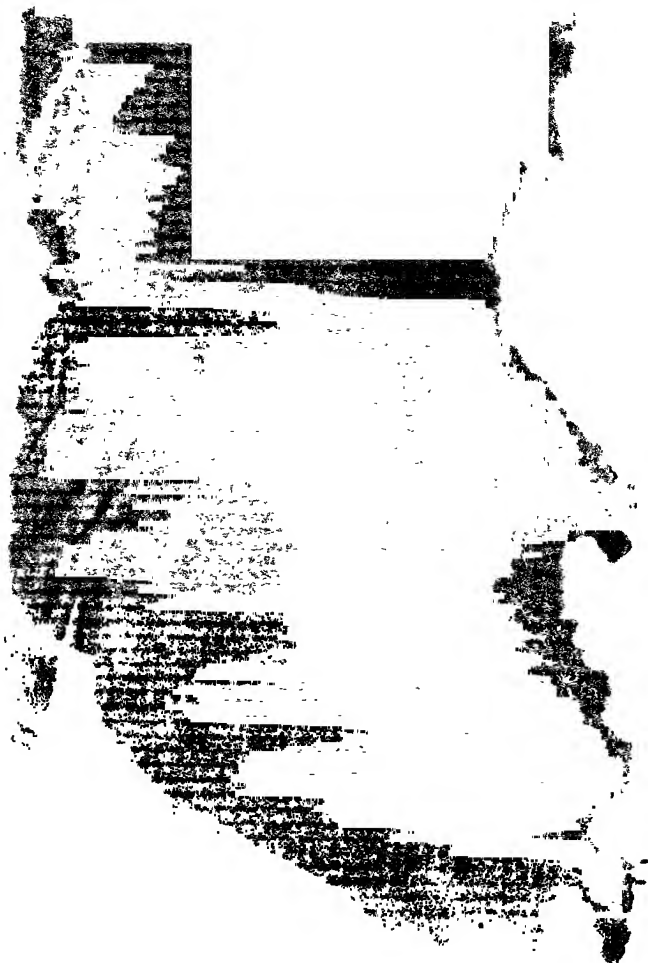


# INDEX

Yi'qût, 159  
 Yezîdis, 55, 124 ff., 131  
 Yusufiyah Canal, 175

Zab, Greater, 61, 111, 112, 114, 116, 159

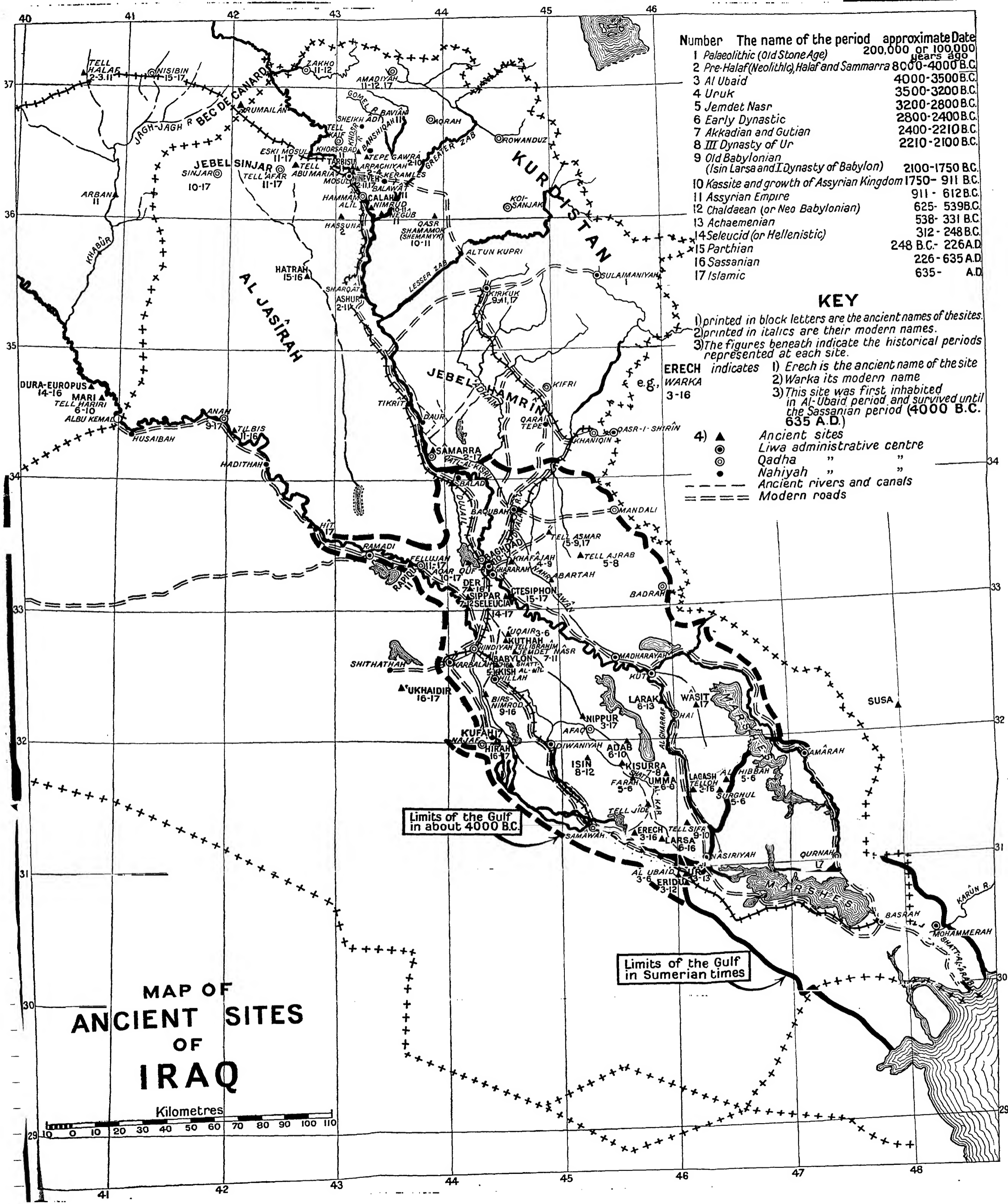
Zagros Mountains, 73  
 Zakho, 89  
*ziggurat*, ix, 98, 106, 112, 147, 148, 164, 175,  
 184, 200, 202, 205, 207, 208  
*zoorma*, 39  
 Zu, 141



CONTINUED.

c/

reporting



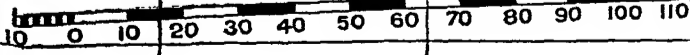
Number	The name of the period	approximate Date
1	Palaeolithic (Old Stone Age)	200,000 or 100,000 years ago
2	Pre-Halaf (Neolithic), Halaf and Sammarra	8000-4000 B.C.
3	Al Ubaid	4000-3500 B.C.
4	Uruk	3500-3200 B.C.
5	Jemdet Nasr	3200-2800 B.C.
6	Early Dynastic	2800-2400 B.C.
7	Akkadian and Gutian	2400-2210 B.C.
8	III Dynasty of Ur	2210-2100 B.C.
9	Old Babylonian (Isin Larsa and I Dynasty of Babylon)	2100-1750 B.C.
10	Kassite and growth of Assyrian Kingdom	1750- 911 B.C.
11	Assyrian Empire	911 - 612 B.C.
12	Chaldaeian (or Neo Babylonian)	625- 539 B.C.
13	Achaemenian	538- 331 B.C.
14	Seleucid (or Hellenistic)	312- 248 B.C.
15	Parthian	248 B.C.- 226 A.D.
16	Sassanian	226- 635 A.D.
17	Islamic	635- A.D.

KEY

- 1) printed in block letters are the ancient names of the sites.
- 2) printed in italics are their modern names.
- 3) The figures beneath indicate the historical periods represented at each site.
- 4)
  - 1) Erech is the ancient name of the site
  - 2) Warka its modern name
  - 3) This site was first inhabited in Al-Ubaid period and survived until the Sassanian period (4000 B.C. 635 A.D.)
- 4)
  - ▲ Ancient sites
  - Liwa administrative centre
  - Qadha " "
  - Nahiyah " "
  - - - Ancient rivers and canals
  - == == Modern roads

MAP OF  
ANCIENT SITES  
OF  
IRAQ

Kilometres









D.G.A. 80.  
CENTRAL ARCHAEOLOGICAL LIBRARY  
NEW DELHI

Issue record.

Call No.— 913.358/110-33683

Author— Lloyd, Seton.

Title— Foundation in the dust.

Borrower's Name	Date of Issue	Date of Return
D.G.A.	11.8.58	

*"A book that is shut is but a block"*

CENTRAL ARCHAEOLOGICAL LIBRARY  
GOVT. OF INDIA  
Department of Archaeology  
NEW DELHI.

Please help us to keep the book  
clean and moving.

S. B., 148, N. DELHI.

